

THE CHRIST  
OF ALL NATIONS



*All people, nations, and languages shall serve Him.*

—*Daniel 7: 14*

*All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go ye therefore, and teach all nations.*

—*Matthew 28: 18-19*

*This gospel of the Kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations, and then shall the end come.*

—*Matthew 24: 14*

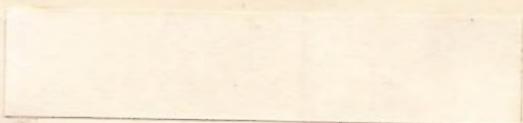
Bible, N.T. Gospels, English, Selected  
1950, Authorized,  
THE CHRIST  
OF ALL NATIONS

BT  
299  
G8



by  
PAUL GUINNESS

ASSOCIATION PRESS  
NEW YORK  
1950



PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN BY RICHARD CLAY AND COMPANY, LTD.,  
BUNGAY, SUFFOLK

University of Southern California

# Foreword

★

**T**HIS book is based on records which have endured for more than twenty centuries. Its authors wrote in different languages to different people. They faced persecution and imprisonment. Their manuscripts were often destroyed, but their message—written in the hearts of men—went far beyond the bounds of the Roman world. It was discussed in prisons as well as in palaces, among slaves as well as by the administrators of an Empire. Driven underground, these Christians kept their faith alive in the catacombs, and bequeathed their message to generations yet to come. Again and again publication was suppressed, new editions burned, translators imprisoned; and yet the story has found its way into a thousand languages and is still the most widely read book in this twentieth century.

In a war prison camp in Germany in September 1943, it became of absorbing interest. Other books were not available. Most of them had been abandoned when the S.S. took 80,000 of us from the prison camps of Italy at the time of the collapse of that country. Nine days and nights in cattle-trucks—first to the borders of Poland and later to the frontiers of France—made it impossible to

## FOREWORD

carry anything but the barest essentials. But the New Testament could not be abandoned. It is under just such circumstances that it lives with new meaning. Conversations with fellow-prisoners from many parts of the world stressed the urgent need, however, for new presentations of the life of Christ, if the story is to capture the imagination of a generation unfamiliar with the record in its traditional form.

This was the task which occupied the greater part of that first winter in Germany. With the conviction that in these pages is the answer to the pressing problems of the modern world, six months were spent preparing them for publication as a modern book. Working in a deserted shed, the only place where it was possible to be alone in a camp of 2,000 men, the book was written in pencil on torn scraps of paper and then rewritten when paper and ink were again available. I endeavoured not merely to create a "harmony of the Gospels" in which a paragraph is taken from one Gospel and a parallel passage from another, but rather to attempt to reconstruct every sentence of dialogue, to weave into a single sequence every detail of description, and to re-emphasise the march of time as the story moves toward its dramatic climax.

As the months came and went, with war still a grim reality in the Far East as well as in Europe, one thought predominated: the world to which Christ came was a world strikingly similar to our own. He was born in the

## FOREWORD

stable of an overcrowded inn, far from His Galilean home because the occupying Power of His day demanded a census of its subject peoples. Being of the house and line of David, His parents had to register at a small village near Jerusalem—such was the strange fulfilment of the Prophet's word. The thinkers of their time felt they were on the eve of a new age, but few realised that the new age was born at Bethlehem. Only in the perspective of the centuries can we understand the star, the stable and the shepherds; and hear the voices of the angel host as the opening theme of a new movement in the symphony of the ages.

With an authority which brought thousands flocking to hear Him He proclaimed His New Order. He ushered in a revolution in human relationships which is still changing men and influencing nations. He inspired the despised Samaritan to help his Jewish neighbour, and the proud Pharisee to serve the hated Gentiles. He replaced men's narrow nationalistic faith with one of world-embracing vision. He founded a new Society which already permeates all society. He created a world community which reaches across the frontiers of every nation. His "New Order" transcended all previous conceptions. It was more than supra-national, for it reached beyond the temporal to the eternal. He claimed 'all power' not only on earth but in heaven. But it was evident from the beginning that there would be a clash with the old regime : a clash which eventually led Him to the Cross.

## FOREWORD

To silence Him they crucified Him. But the third day He rose again! Out of defeat He snatched a victory which changed the course of history. "He lifted with His pierced hands empires off their hinges, turned the tide of civilisation out of its channel and still governs the ages." Indeed, it is written: "All people, nations and languages shall serve Him," for He is the Christ of all Nations.

# Contents

\*

## Foreword

I. A NEW AGE IS BORN AT BETHLEHEM <i>Unto us a Child is born</i>	1
II. JOHN ANNOUNCES THE NEW DAY <i>The Voice crying in the Wilderness</i>	17
III. CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER <i>The Spirit of the Lord is upon me</i>	33
IV. CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY <i>On this Rock will I build my Church</i>	99
V. THE CLASH WITH THE OLD REGIME <i>Behold, thy King cometh unto thee</i>	173
VI. CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED <i>My God, why hast Thou forsaken me?</i>	203
VII. HE RISES TO RE-MAKE THE WORLD <i>All power is given unto me</i>	245
VIII. ALL NATIONS SHALL SERVE HIM <i>Go ye therefore, and teach all nations</i>	261
Synopsis	273

*This Life of Christ, freely compiled from the Four Gospels, is based on the Authorized Version of the New Testament, which is Crown Copyright. The author and the publishers gratefully acknowledge kind permission to use this text.*

*The Synopsis, which was also prepared during the months of imprisonment, may provide a basis for simultaneous study of the life of Christ by Youth Groups and Bible Classes in different parts of the world—and indeed by any reader who wishes to recapture the sequence of the story. Translations of this Synopsis, and of the book as a whole, are being prepared for publication in various languages.*

# A NEW AGE IS BORN AT BETHLEHEM

I.

*Unto us a Child is born*

## THE WORD WAS MADE FLESH



IN the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not anything made that was made. In him was life; and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not. There was a man sent from God, whose name was John. The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the light, that all men through him might believe. He was not that light, but was sent to bear witness of that light. That was the true light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world. He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. He came unto his own, and his own received him not. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: which were born not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth.

Chapter 5, 700 B.C.  
The Prophecy of Micah

Thou Bethlehem Ephrathah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall He come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting.

Chapter 9, 700 B.C.  
The Prophecy of Isaiah

The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light: they that dwelt in the land of the shadow of death, upon them hath light shined. . . . For unto us a child is born, unto us a Son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder; and His name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, the Prince of Peace. Of Mighty God, the Everlasting Father, the Prince of Peace. Of the increase of His government and of peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon His kingdom to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.

## PROLOGUE



### THE BEGINNING ANTICIPATES THE END

THERE was in the days of Herod, the King of Judæa, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abyah: and his wife was the daughter of Aaron, and her name was Elisabeth. And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless. And they had no child, because Elisabeth was barren; and they both were now well stricken in years.

And it came to pass, that while he executed the priest's office before God in the order of his course—according to the custom of the priest's office his lot was to burn incense when he went into the temple of the Lord, and the whole multitude of the people were praying without at the time of incense—there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord standing on the right side of the altar of incense. And when Zacharias saw him, he was troubled, and fear fell upon him.

But the angel said unto him, \*

“Fear not, Zacharias; for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John. And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and many shall rejoice at his birth. For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from

## A NEW AGE IS BORN AT BETHLEHEM

his mother's womb. And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God. And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord."

And Zacharias said unto the angel,

"Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years."

And the angel answering said unto him,

"I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God; and am sent to speak unto thee, and to show thee these glad tidings. And, behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed, because thou believest not my words which shall be fulfilled in their season."

And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he waited so long in the temple. And when he came out, he could not speak unto them; and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple; for he beckoned unto them, and remained speechless. And it came to pass, that, as soon as the days of his ministration were accomplished, he departed unto his own house.

And after those days his wife Elisabeth conceived, and hid herself five months, saying,

"Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the days wherein he looked on me, to take away my reproach among men."

*His name shall be called Jesus*

And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee named Nazareth, to a virgin

## UNTO US A CHILD IS BORN

espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name was Mary.

And the angel came in unto her, and said,

“Hail, thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women.” And when she saw him she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this should be.

And the angel said unto her,

“Fear not, Mary; for thou hast found favour with God. And, behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name JESUS. He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest; and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David: and he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end.”

Then said Mary unto the angel,

“How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?”

And the angel answered and said unto her,

“The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee; therefore that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God. And, behold, thy cousin Elisabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age; and this is the sixth month with her who was called barren. For with God nothing shall be impossible.”

And Mary said,

“Behold the handmaiden of the Lord; be it unto me according to thy word.”

And the angel departed from her.

And Mary arose in those days, and went into the hill

## A NEW AGE IS BORN AT BETHLEHEM

country with haste, into a city of Judah; and entered into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabeth. And it came to pass, that, when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb, and Elisabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost, and she spake out with a loud voice and said,

“Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy womb. And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come to me? For, lo, as soon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy. And blessed is she that believed: for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her from the Lord.”

And Mary said,

“My soul doth magnify the Lord, and my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour. For he hath regarded the low estate of his handmaiden: for, behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed. For he that is mighty hath done to me great things; and holy is his name. And his mercy is on them that fear him from generation to generation. He hath showed strength with his arm; he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts. He hath put down the mighty from their seats, and exalted them of low degree. He hath filled the hungry with good things; and the rich he hath sent empty away. He hath holpen his servant Israel, in remembrance of his mercy; as he spake to our fathers, to Abraham, and to his seed for ever.”

And Mary abode with her about three months, and returned to her own house.

Now when Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they

## UNTO US A CHILD IS BORN

came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost. Then Joseph her husband, being a just man, and not willing to make her a public example, was minded to put her away privily. But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying,

“Joseph thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife; for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost. And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.”

Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, “Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name ‘Emmanuel’, which, being interpreted is, ‘God with us’.”

Then Joseph being raised from sleep, did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his wife: and knew her not till she had brought forth her firstborn son.

### *His name shall be called John*

Now Elisabeth’s full time came that she should be delivered; and she brought forth a son. And her neighbours and her cousins heard how the Lord had showed great mercy upon her; and they rejoiced with her. And it came to pass on the eighth day that they came to circumcise the child; and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.

And his mother answered and said,  
“Not so; but he shall be called John.”

And they said unto her,  
“There is none of thy kindred that is called by this

## A NEW AGE IS BORN AT BETHLEHEM

name." And they made signs to his father, how he would have him called.

And he asked for a writing table, and wrote, saying,  
"His name is John." And they marvelled all.

And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue loosed, and he spake, and praised God. And fear came upon all that dwelt round about them, and all these sayings were noised abroad throughout all the hill country of Judæa.

And all they that heard them laid them up in their hearts, saying,

"What manner of child shall this be?" And the hand of the Lord was with him.

And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying:

"Blessed be the Lord God of Israel; for he hath visited and redeemed his people, and hath raised up a horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David; as he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, which have been since the world began; that we should be saved from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us; to perform the mercy promised to our fathers, and to remember his holy covenant; the oath which he sware to our father Abraham, that he would grant unto us, that we, being delivered out of the hand of our enemies, might serve him without fear, in holiness and righteousness before him, all the days of our life. And thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the Highest: for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to prepare his ways; to give knowledge of salvation unto his people by the remission of their sins, through the tender mercy of our God; whereby the dayspring from on high hath visited us,

## UNTO US A CHILD IS BORN

to give light to them that sit in darkness and in the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace.”

And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the desert till the day of his showing unto Israel.

### *Unto you is born a Saviour*

And it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Cæsar Augustus, that all the world should be taxed. (And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governor of Syria). And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city. And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judæa, unto the city of David which is called Bethlehem, because he was of the house and lineage of David, to be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child. And so it was that, while they were there, the days were accomplished that she should be delivered. And she brought forth her firstborn son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger; because there was no room for them in the inn.

And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night. And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them; and they were sore afraid.

And the angel said unto them,

“Fear not: for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this shall be a sign unto you; ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger.”

And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying,

## A NEW AGE IS BORN AT BETHLEHEM

“Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men.”

And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another,

“Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us.”

And they came with haste, and found Mary and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger. And when they had seen it, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this child. And all they that heard it wondered at those things which were told them by the shepherds. But Mary kept all these things and pondered them in her heart. And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them.

### *Mine eyes have seen thy Salvation*

And when eight days were accomplished for the circumcision of the child, his name was called JESUS, which was so named of the angel before he was conceived in the womb.

And when the days of her purification according to the law of Moses were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord (as it is written in the law of the Lord, “Every male that openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord”), and to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of the Lord, “A pair of turtledoves, and two young pigeons.”

And, behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; and the same man was just and devout, wait-

## UNTO US A CHILD IS BORN

ing for the consolation of Israel: and the Holy Ghost was upon him. And it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord's Christ. And he came by the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law, then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said:

“Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word: for mine eyes have seen thy salvation, which thou hast prepared before the face of all people; a light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.”

And Joseph and his mother marvelled at those things which were spoken of him. And Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary, his mother,

“Behold, this child is set for the fall and rising again of many in Israel; and for a sign which shall be spoken against; yea, a sword shall pierce through thy own soul also; that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.”

And there was one Anna, a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser (she was of great age, and had lived with a husband seven years from her virginity); and she was a widow of about four score and four years, which departed not from the temple, but served God with fastings and prayers night and day. And she coming in that instant gave thanks likewise unto the Lord, and spake of him to all them that looked for redemption in Jerusalem.

*We have seen His star in the east*

Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judæa in the

## A NEW AGE IS BORN AT BETHLEHEM

days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, saying,

“Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.”

When Herod the king had heard these things, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born.

And they said unto him,

“In Bethlehem of Judæa: for thus it is written by the prophet, ‘And thou Bethlehem, in the land of Judah, art not least among the princes of Judah, for out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule thy people Israel.’ ”

Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise men, inquired of them diligently what time the star appeared. And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said,

“Go and search diligently for the young child; and when ye have found him, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also.”

When they had heard the king, they departed; and, lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was. And when they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy. And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures they presented unto him gifts; gold and frankincense and myrrh. And being warned of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

## UNTO US A CHILD IS BORN

And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in a dream, saying,

“Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word: for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him.”

When he arose, he took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt: and was there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, “Out of Egypt have I called my son.”

Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently inquired of the wise men.

Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying,

“In Ramah was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.”

But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, saying,

“Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel; for they are dead which sought the young child’s life.”

And he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel. But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judæa in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither. Notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee. And he came and dwelt in the city called Nazareth:

## A NEW AGE IS BORN AT BETHLEHEM

that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets: "He shall be called a Nazarene."

And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom and the grace of God was upon him.

*And when Jesus was twelve years old*

Now his parents went to Jerusalem every year at the feast of the passover. And when he was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem after the custom of the feast. And when they had fulfilled the days, as they returned, the child Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem; and Joseph and his mother knew not of it. But they, supposing him to have been in the company, went a day's journey; and sought him among their kinsfolk and acquaintance. And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking him. And it came to pass, that after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions. And all that heard him were astonished at his understanding and answers.

And when they saw him, they were amazed; and his mother said unto him,

"Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing."

And he said unto them,

"How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be about my Father's business?" And they understood not the saying which he spake unto them.

And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject unto them: but his mother kept all these sayings in her heart. And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and man.

# JOHN ANNOUNCES THE NEW DAY

II.

*The Voice crying in the wilderness*

*Comfort ye, comfort ye, my people, saith your God. Speak ye comfortably to Jerusalem, and cry unto her, that her warfare is accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned: . . . The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, ‘Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make straight in the desert a highway for our God.’ Every valley shall be exalted, and every mountain and hill shall be made low: and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough places plain: and the glory of the LORD shall be revealed, and all flesh shall see it together: for the mouth of the LORD hath spoken it.*

*The Prophecy of Isaiah  
Chapter 40, 700 B.C.*

JOHN'S TRIBUTE TO THE CHRIST  
AFTER HIS BAPTISM  
HIS TEMPTATION  
AND THE FEAST OF THE PASSOVER



NOW in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Cæsar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judæa, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip being tetrarch of Ituræa and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanius the tetrarch of Abilene, Annas and Caiaphas being the high priests, the word of God came unto John the son of Zacharias in the wilderness. And he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins, saying,

“Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.”

THE VOICE CRYING IN THE WILDERNESS

For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Isaiah saying,

“Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. The voice of one crying in the wilderness, ‘Prepare ye the way of the Lord; make his paths straight.’ Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low; and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough ways shall be made smooth; and all flesh shall see the salvation of God.”

And John was clothed with camel's hair, and with a

## JOHN ANNOUNCES THE NEW DAY

girdle of skin about his loins; and he did eat locusts and wild honey. And there went out unto him all the land of Judæa, and they of Jerusalem, and were all baptized of him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins.

But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them,

“O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance: and think not to say within yourselves, ‘We have Abraham to our father,’ for I say unto you that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree that bringing not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.”

And the people asked him, saying,

“What shall we do then?”

He saith unto them,

“He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath meat, let him do likewise.”

Then came also the publicans to be baptized, and said unto him,

“Master, what shall we do?”

And he said unto them,

“Exact no more than that which is appointed you.”

And the soldiers likewise demanded of him, saying,

“And what shall we do?”

And he said unto them,

“Do violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely; and be content with your wages.”

And as the people were in expectation, and all mused

## THE VOICE CRYING IN THE WILDERNESS

in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ or not, John answered, saying unto them all,

“I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire: whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner: but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.”

And many other things in his exhortation preached he unto the people.

*This is my beloved Son*

And it came to pass in those days that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, to be baptized of John in Jordan.

But John forbade him, saying,

“I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?”

And Jesus answering said unto him,

“Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfill all righteousness.”

Then he suffered him. And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him: and lo, a voice from heaven, saying,

“This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.”

And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed)<sup>1</sup> the son of Joseph, which was the

<sup>1</sup> This Genealogy is from the Revised Version.

## JOHN ANNOUNCES THE NEW DAY

son of Heli, which was the son of Matthat, which was the son of Levi, which was the son of Melchi, which was the son of Janna, which was the son of Joseph,

Which was the son of Mattathias, which was the son of Amos, which was the son of Naum, which was the son of Esl, which was the son of Nagge,

Which was the son of Maath, which was the son of Mattathias, which was the son of Semei, which was the son of Joseph, which was the son of Juda,

Which was the son of Joanna, which was the son of Rhesa, which was the son of Zorobabel, which was the son of Salathiel, which was the son of Neri,

Which was the son of Melchi, which was the son of Addi, which was the son of Cosam, which was the son of Elmodam, which was the son of Er,

Which was the son of Jose, which was the son of Eliezer, which was the son of Jorim, which was the son of Matthat, which was the son of Levi,

Which was the son of Simeon, which was the son of Juda, which was the son of Joseph, which was the son of Jonan, which was the son of Eliakim,

Which was the son of Melea, which was the son of Menan, which was the son of Mattatha, which was the son of Nathan, which was the son of David,

Which was the son of Jesse, which was the son of Obed, which was the son of Booz, which was the son of Salmon, which was the son of Naasson,

Which was the son of Aminadab, which was the son of Aram, which was the son of Esrom, which was the son of Phares, which was the son of Juda,

Which was the son of Jacob, which was the son of Isaac,

## THE VOICE CRYING IN THE WILDERNESS

which was the son of Abraham, which was the son of Thara, which was the son of Nachor,

Which was the son of Saruch, which was the son of Ragau, which was the son of Phalec, which was the son of Heber, which was the son of Sala,

Which was the son of Cainan, which was the son of Arphaxad, which was the son of Sem, which was the son of Noe, which was the son of Lamech,

Which was the son of Mathusala, which was the son of Enoch, which was the son of Jared, which was the son of Maleleel, which was the son of Cainan,

Which was the son of Enos, which was the son of Seth, which was the son of Adam, which was the son of God.

*This is He of whom I spake*

And John bare witness of him, and cried, saying,

“This is he of whom I spake, ‘He that cometh after me is preferred before me; for he was before me.’ And of his fulness have all we received, and grace for grace. For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ. No man hath seen God at any time, the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him.”

And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, “Who art thou?”

And he confessed, and denied not; but confessed,

“I am not the Christ.”

And they asked him,

“What then? Art thou Elijah?”

And he saith, “I am not.”

“Art thou that Prophet?”

## JOHN ANNOUNCES THE NEW DAY

And he answered, "No."

Then said they unto him,

"Who art thou? That we may give an answer to them that sent us. What sayest thou of thyself?"

He said,

"I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, 'Make straight the way of the Lord,' as said the prophet Isaiah."

And they which were sent were of the Pharisees. And they asked him, and said unto him,

"Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, nor Elijah, neither that prophet?"

John answered them saying,

"I baptize with water: but there standeth one among you, whom ye know not; he it is, who coming after me is preferred before me, whose shoe-latchet I am not worthy to unloose."

These things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.

## JESUS LED BY THE SPIRIT INTO THE WILDERNESS

And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness, being forty days tempted of the devil. And in those days he did eat nothing; and when they were ended, he afterward hungered.

*If thou be the Son of God*

And the devil said unto him,

## THE VOICE CRYING IN THE WILDERNESS

“If thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread.”

And Jesus answered him, saying,

“Thou shalt not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.”

Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple, and saith unto him,

“If thou be the son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, ‘He shall give his angels charge concerning thee: and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.’ ”

Jesus said unto him,

“It is written again, ‘Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.’ ”

Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; and saith unto him,

“All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.”

Then said Jesus unto him,

“Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, ‘Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.’ ”

Then the devil leaveth him, and, behold, angels came and ministered unto him.

*This is the Son of God*

The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith,

“Behold, the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world! This is he of whom I said, ‘After me cometh a man which is preferred before me; for he was before me.’ ”

## JOHN ANNOUNCES THE NEW DAY

And I knew him not: but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water."

And John bare record, saying,

"I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon him. And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, 'Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the Holy Ghost.' And I saw, and bare record that this is the Son of God."

Again the next day after, John stood, and two of his disciples; and looking upon Jesus as he walked, he saith,

"Behold the Lamb of God!"

And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus.

Then Jesus turned, and saw them following, and saith unto them,

"What seek ye?"

They said unto him,

"Rabbi (which is to say, being interpreted, 'Master'), where dwellest thou?"

He saith unto them,

"Come and see."

They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was about the tenth hour. One of the two which heard John speak, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peter's brother.

He first findeth his own brother Simon, and saith unto him,

"We have found the Messiah, which is, being interpreted, the Christ." And he brought him to Jesus.

## THE VOICE CRYING IN THE WILDERNESS

And when Jesus beheld him, he said,  
“Thou art Simon, the son of John: thou shalt be called Cephas,” which is by interpretation, Peter—a rock.

### *Thou art the Son of God*

The day following Jesus would go forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and saith unto him,

“Follow me.”

Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter.

Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him,

“We have found him, of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets, did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph.”

And Nathanael said unto him,

“Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth?”

Philip saith unto him,

“Come and see.”

Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith unto him, “Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile!”

Nathanael saith unto him,

“Whence knowest thou me?”

Jesus answered and said unto him,

“Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig tree, I saw thee.”

Nathanael answered and saith unto him,

“Rabbi, thou art the Son of God: thou art the King of Israel.”

Jesus answered and said unto him,

“Because I said unto thee, ‘I saw thee under the fig tree,’ believest thou? thou shalt see greater things than these.”

## JOHN ANNOUNCES THE NEW DAY

And he saith unto him, “Verily, verily, I say unto you, Hereafter ye shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.”

And the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there: and both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the marriage.

And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus saith unto him,

“They have no wine.”

Jesus saith unto her,

“Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come.”

His mother saith unto the servants,

“Whatsoever he saith unto you, do it.”

And there were set there six waterpots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins apiece.

Jesus saith unto them,

“Fill the waterpots with water.” And they filled them to the brim.

And he saith unto them,

“Draw out now and bear unto the governor of the feast.” And they bare it.

When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was (but the servants which drew the water knew), the governor of the feast called the bridegroom, and saith unto him,

“Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine; and when men have well drunk, then that which is worse; but thou hast kept the good wine until now.”

## THE VOICE CRYING IN THE WILDERNESS

This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth his glory; and his disciples believed on him.

After this, he went down to Capernaum, he, and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples; and they continued there not many days.

And the Jews' passover was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

## AS MOSES LIFTED UP THE SERPENT IN THE WILDERNESS

Now when he was in Jerusalem at the passover, on the feast day, many believed in his name, when they saw the miracles which he did. But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, because he knew all men, and needed not that any should testify of man; for he knew what was in man.

*The Son of man must be lifted up*

There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: the same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him,

“Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles which thou doest, except God be with him.”

Jesus answered and said unto him,

“Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the Kingdom of God.”

Nicodemus saith unto him,

“How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?”

Jesus answered,

## JOHN ANNOUNCES THE NEW DAY

“Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. Marvel not that I said unto thee, ‘Ye must be born again.’ The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is everyone that is born of the Spirit.”

Nicodemus answered and said unto him,  
“How can these things be?”

Jesus answered and said unto him,

“Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things? Verily, verily, I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and ye believe not our witness. If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe, if I tell you of heavenly things? And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven. And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life.

“For God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness

## THE VOICE CRYING IN THE WILDERNESS

rather than light because their deeds were evil. For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved. But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

“He that cometh from above is above all: he that is of the earth is earthy, and speaketh of the earth; he that cometh from heaven is above all. And what he hath seen and heard, that he testifieth; and no man receiveth his testimony. He that hath received his testimony hath set to his seal that God is true. For he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the Spirit by measure unto him. The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand. He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life; and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.”

### *He must increase, I must decrease*

After these things came Jesus and his disciples into the land of Judæa; and there he tarried with them, and baptized. And John also was baptizing in Ænon near to Salim, because there was much water there; and they came and were baptized. For John was not yet cast into prison. Then there arose a question between some of John’s disciples and the Jews about purifying.

And they came unto John, and said unto him,

“Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou bearest witness, behold, the same baptizeth, and all men come to him.”

John answered and said,

“A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from

## JOHN ANNOUNCES THE NEW DAY

heaven. Ye yourselves bear me witness, that I said, 'I am not the Christ,' but that 'I am sent before him.' He that hath the bride is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, which standeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because of the bridegroom's voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled. He must increase, but I must decrease."

Then Herod the tetrarch, being reproved by John for Herodias, his brother Philip's wife, and for all the evils which Herod had done, added yet this above all, that he shut up John in prison.

# CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

III.

*The Spirit of the Lord is upon me*

*The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me; because he hath anointed me to preach good tidings to the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the broken-hearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; to proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; to appoint to them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they may be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he may be glorified.*

*The Prophecy of Isaiah  
Chapter 61, 700 B.C.*

THE SUMMER OF A.D. 28  
JESUS RETURNS IN THE POWER  
OF THE SPIRIT INTO GALILEE



NOW when Jesus heard that John was cast into prison; and when he knew that the Pharisees had heard that he made and baptized more disciples than John (though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples), he left Judæa, and departed again into Galilee. And he must needs go through Samaria.

*I know that Messiah cometh*

Then cometh he to a city of Samaria, which is called Sychar, near to the parcel of ground that Jacob gave to his son Joseph. Now Jacob's well was there. Jesus therefore, being wearied with his journey, sat thus on the well: and it was about the sixth hour.

Then cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water.

Jesus saith unto her,

“Give me to drink.”

For his disciples were gone away unto the city to buy food.

Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him:

“How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria?” For the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans.

Jesus answered and said unto her,

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

“If thou knewst the gift of God, and who it is that saith unto thee, ‘Give me to drink,’ thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water.”

The woman saith unto him:

“Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that living water? Art thou greater than our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattle?”

Jesus answered and said unto her,

“Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again, but whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life.”

The woman saith unto him,

“Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.”

Jesus saith unto her,

“Go, call thy husband, and come hither.”

The woman answered and said,

“I have no husband.”

Jesus said unto her,

“Thou hast well said, ‘I have no husband:’ for thou hast had five husbands; and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: in that saidst thou truly.”

The woman said unto him,

“Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet. Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and ye say that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship.”

Jesus saith unto her,

“Woman, believe me, the hour cometh when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

Father. Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship; for salvation is of the Jews. But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth."

The woman saith unto him:

"I know that Messiah cometh, which is called Christ: when he is come, he will tell us all things."

Jesus saith unto her,

"I that speak unto thee am he."

*We know that this is indeed the Christ*

And upon this came his disciples, and marvelled that he talked with the woman: yet no man said, "What seekest thou?" or, "Why talkest thou with her?"

The woman then left her waterpot, and went her way into the city, and saith to the men:

"Come, see a man, which told me all things that ever I did: is not this the Christ?"

Then they went out of the city, and came to him.

In the mean time his disciples prayed him, saying,

"Master, eat."

But he said unto them,

"I have meat to eat that ye know not of."

Therefore said the disciples one to another,

"Hath any man brought him aught to eat?"

Jesus said unto them:

"My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work. Say not ye, 'There are yet four months,

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

and then comest the harvest'? behold, I say unto you, 'Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; for they are white already to harvest. And he that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternal: that both he that soweth and he that reapeth may rejoice together.' And herein is that saying true, 'One soweth, and another reapeth.' I sent you to reap that whereon ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entered into their labours."

And many of the Samaritans of that city believed on him for the saying of the woman, which testified, "He told me all that ever I did." So when the Samaritans were come unto him, they besought him that he would tarry with them: and he abode there two days. And many more believed because of his own word; and said unto the woman:

"Now we believe, not because of thy saying: for we have heard him ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world."

Now after two days he departed thence, and went into Galilee. For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no honour in his own country. Then when he was come into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all the things that he did at Jerusalem at the feast: for they also went unto the feast.

*Except ye see, ye will not believe*

So Jesus came again into Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine. And there was a certain nobleman, whose son was sick at Capernaum. When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judæa into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him that he would come down, and heal his son: for he was at the point of death.

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

Then said Jesus unto him,

“Except ye see signs and wonders, ye will not believe.”

The nobleman saith unto him,

“Sir, come down ere my child die.”

Jesus saith unto him,

“Go thy way; thy son liveth.”

And the man believed the word that Jesus had spoken unto him, and he went his way. And as he was now going down, his servants met him, and told him, saying,

“Thy son liveth.”

Then inquired he of them the hour when he began to amend. And they said unto him,

“Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him.”

So the father knew that it was at the same hour, in the which Jesus said unto him, “Thy son liveth:” and himself believed, and his whole house.

This is again the second miracle that Jesus did, when he was come out of Judæa into Galilee.

*He marvelled because of their unbelief*

And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee: and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about. And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.

And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up for to read. And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Isaiah. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written,

“The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and the recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, to preach the acceptable year of the Lord.”

And he closed the book, and gave it again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him.

And he began to say unto them,

“This day is this Scripture fulfilled in your ears.”

And all bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. But many hearing him, were astonished, saying,

“From whence hath this man these things? and what wisdom is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands? Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James, and Joses, and Judas, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us?” And they were offended at him.

And he said unto them,

“Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, ‘Physician, heal thyself’: whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum do also here in thy country.”

And he said,

“Verily I say unto you, No prophet is accepted in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house. But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elijah, when the heavens were shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land; but unto none of them was Elijah sent, save only to Sarepta, a city of Sidon, unto a woman that

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

was a widow. And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Elisha the prophet; and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian."

And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath, and rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might cast him down headlong. But he, passing through the midst of them, went his way.

And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands on a few sick folk, and healed them. And he marvelled because of their unbelief.

*From that time Jesus began to preach*

And leaving Nazareth he came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and taught them on the Sabbath days. And they were astonished at his doctrine: for his word was with power. And he dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea coast, in the borders of Zebulun and Naphtali: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying,

"The land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles; the people which sat in darkness saw a great light; and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death, light is sprung up."

And from that time Jesus began to preach, and to say,

"Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

"The time is fulfilled, the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye and believe the gospel."

And it came to pass, that, as the people pressed upon him

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

to hear the word of God, he stood by the lake Genesaret, and saw two ships standing by the lake: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nets. And he entered into one of the ships, which was Simon's, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land. And he sat down and taught the people out of the ship.

Now when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon,

“Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught.”

And Simon answering said unto him,

“Master, we have toiled all night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless at thy word I will let down the net.”

And when they had this done, they enclosed a great multitude of fishes: and their net brake. And they beckoned unto their partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the ships, so that they began to sink.

When Simon Peter saw it, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying,

“Depart from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord.”

For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken: and so was also James, and John, the sons of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon.

And Jesus said unto Simon,

“Fear not; from henceforth thou shalt catch men.”

And when they had brought their ships to land, they forsook all, and followed him. And James, and John his brother, left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him.

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

*What new doctrine is this?*

And they went into Capernaum; and straightway on the sabbath day he entered into the synagogue and taught. And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes. And in the synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an unclean devil, and cried out with a loud voice, saying,

“Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God.”

And Jesus rebuked him, saying,

“Hold thy peace and come out of him.”

And when the devil had torn him, and thrown him in the midst, and cried with a loud voice: he came out of him, and hurt him not. And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying,

“What word is this? What new doctrine is this? for with authority and power he commandeth even the unclean spirits, and they obey him.”

And immediately his fame spread abroad throughout all the region round about Galilee.

And he arose out of the synagogue, and entered into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and John. And Simon's wife's mother lay sick of a great fever; and they besought him for her. And he came and took her by the hand and lifted her up; and he rebuked the fever, and it left her. And immediately she arose and ministered unto them.

And at even, when the sun did set, all they that had any sick with divers diseases brought them unto him, and them that were possessed with devils: and all the city was gath-

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

ered together at the door. And he cast out the spirits with his word, and laid his hands on all that were sick and healed them: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying, "Himself took our infirmities and bare our sicknesses." And he suffered not the devils to speak, because they knew him; for devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying,

"Thou art the Christ, the Son of God."

And he, rebuking them, suffered them not to speak: for they knew he was Christ.

*His fame went throughout all Syria*

And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed. And Simon and they that were with him followed after him. And when they had found him, they said unto him,

"All men seek for thee."

And the people came unto him, and stayed him, that he should not depart from them. And he said unto them,

"I must preach the kingdom of God to other cities also: for therefore am I sent." And he said to his disciples, "Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there also: for therefore came I forth."

And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the Kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people. And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatic,

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

and those which had the palsy, and he healed them. And there followed him great multitudes of people from Galilee, and from Decapolis, and from Jerusalem, and from Judaea, and from beyond Jordan.

And it came to pass, when he was in a certain city, behold, there came a leper to him, and kneeling down besought him, saying,

“Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.”

And Jesus, moved with compassion, put forth his hand, and touched him, saying,

“I will, be thou clean.”

And as soon as he had spoken, immediately the leprosy departed from him, and he was cleansed. And he straitly charged him, and forthwith sent him away; saying,

“See thou say nothing to any man: but go thy way, show thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing the gift which Moses commanded, for a testimony unto him.”

And he went out, and began to publish it much, and to blaze abroad the matter; and so much the more went there out a fame abroad of him: insomuch that Jesus could no more openly enter into the city, but was without in desert places: and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed by him of their infirmities.

And he withdrew himself into the wilderness, and prayed.

*The Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins*

And again, after some days, he entered into his own city of Capernaum, and it was noised that he was in the house. And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no room to receive them, no, not so much as

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

about the door: and he preached the word unto them. And there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, which were come out of every town in Galilee, and Judæa and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was present to heal them.

And behold, four men brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed: and they sought means to bring him in, and to lay him before him. And when they could not find by what way they might bring him in because of the multitude, they went upon the housetop, and uncovered the roof where he was: and when they had broken it up, they let him down with his couch into the midst before Jesus.

And when he saw their faith, he said unto the sick of the palsy,

“Son, be of good cheer, thy sins be forgiven thee.”

And the scribes and Pharisees began to reason, and to say within themselves,

“Who is this which speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgive sins but God alone?”

And immediately, when Jesus perceived in his spirit that they so reasoned within themselves, he said unto them,

“Wherfore think ye evil? and why reason ye these things in your hearts? For whether is easier to say, ‘Thy sins be forgiven thee’ or to say, ‘Arise and walk’? But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins (he saith to the sick of the palsy), I say unto thee, Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine own house.”

And immediately he arose, and took up that whereon he lay, and went forth before them all; and he departed to his

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

own house, glorifying God. And they were all amazed, and were filled with fear, saying,

“We have seen strange things today.”

But the multitudes marvelled, and glorified God, which had given such power unto men.

*I am come to call sinners to repentance*

And after these things Jesus went forth by the sea side; and all the multitude resorted unto him, and he taught them. And as he passed by he saw a publican, named Matthew (also called Levi, the son of Alphæus), sitting at the receipt of custom: and he said unto him,

“Follow me.” And he left all, and arose and followed him.

And Matthew made him a great feast in his own house: and there were a great company of publicans and others that sat down with Jesus and his disciples; for they were many, and they followed him.

But the scribes and Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying,

“How is it that your master eateth and drinketh with publicans and sinners?”

When Jesus heard it, he saith unto them,

“They that are whole have no need of a physician; but they that are sick. But go ye and learn what that meaneth, ‘I will have mercy, and not sacrifice:’ for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.”

Then came to him the disciples of John, saying,

“Why do we, and the Pharisees, fast often, and make prayers; but thy disciples eat and drink?”

And Jesus said unto them,

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

“Can the children of the bridechamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? As long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot fast. But the days will come when the bridegroom will be taken from them, and then shall they fast in those days.”

And he also spake a parable unto them:

“No man seweth a piece of new cloth on an old garment; else the new piece that filled it up taketh away from the old, and the rent is made worse. Neither do men put new wine into old bottles; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish. But new wine must be put into new bottles; and both are preserved. No man also having drunk old wine straightway desireth new; for he saith ‘The old is better.’ ”

*The Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath*

And it came to pass at that time, that Jesus went through the corn fields on the sabbath day; and the disciples began, as they went, to pluck the ears of corn, and to eat, rubbing them in their hands. But when the Pharisees saw it, certain of them said unto him,

“Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawful to do on the sabbath day.”

But Jesus answered them,

“Have ye never read what David did, when he was ahungered, and they that were with him; how he went into the house of God in the days of Abiathar the high priest, and did eat the showbread, which is not lawful to eat but for the priests, and gave also to them which were with him? Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the sabbath days the priests in the temple profane the sabbath,

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

and are blameless? But I say unto you, that in this place is one greater than the temple. But if ye had known what this meaneth, 'I will have mercy and not sacrifice,' ye would not have condemned the guiltless."

And he said unto them,

"The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath: therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath."

*Is it lawful to do good on the sabbath day?*

And it came to pass also on another sabbath, that he entered into the synagogue and taught: and, behold, there was a man whose right hand was withered. And the scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath day; that they might find an accusation against him. But he knew their thoughts, and said unto the man which had the withered hand,

"Rise up, and stand forth in the midst." And he stood forth.

And he said unto them,

"What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out? How much then is a man better than a sheep? Wherefore, is it lawful to do good on the sabbath day, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill?" But they held their peace.

And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he saith unto the man,

"Stretch forth thine hand." And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other.

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

And the Pharisees were filled with madness; and communed one with another what they might do to Jesus. And they went forth, and straightway took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him. But when Jesus knew it, he withdrew himself with his disciples to the sea: and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Judæa, and from Jerusalem, and from Idumæa, and from beyond Jordan; and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, when they heard what great things he did, came unto him.

And he spake to his disciples, that a small ship should wait on him because of the multitude lest they should throng him. For he healed many; insomuch that they pressed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues. And unclean spirits when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying,

“Thou art the Son of God.”

And he straitly charged them that they should not make him known: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying,

“Behold my servant, whom I have chosen; my beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased: I will put my Spirit upon him, and he shall show judgment to the Gentiles. He shall not strive, nor cry; neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets. A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgment unto victory. And in his name shall the Gentiles trust.”

*And he went into a mountain to pray*

And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

And when it was day, he called unto him his disciples, whom he would; and he ordained twelve, whom he also named apostles: that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach, and to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils. And Simon he surnamed Peter; and James the son of Zebedee, and John the brother of James; and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, 'The Sons of Thunder;' and Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the son of Alphæus, and Thaddæus, and Simon called the Zealot, and Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him.

And he came down with them and stood in the plain, and the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of Judæa and Jerusalem and from the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear him, and he healeth them of their diseases; and they that were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed. And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went virtue out of him, and he healed them all.

And seeing the multitudes he went up into the mountain: and when he was set, his disciples came unto him: and he opened his mouth and taught them, saying,

"Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

"Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.

"Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

"Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled.

"Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.

"Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

“Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God.

“Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness’ sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and hate you, and persecute you, and shall separate you from their company, and say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

“But woe unto you that are rich! for ye have received your consolation. Woe unto you that are full! for ye shall hunger. Woe unto you that laugh now! for ye shall mourn and weep. Woe unto you when all men shall speak well of you! for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

“Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? It is henceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men. Ye are the light of the world. A city set on an hill cannot be hid. Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

*Ye have heard . . . but I say unto you*

“Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily, I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. For I say unto you, that except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

“Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, ‘Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment:’ but I say unto you, that whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, ‘Raca,’ shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, ‘Thou fool,’ shall be in danger of hell fire. Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath aught against thee; leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift. Agree with thine adversary quickly, while thou art in the way with him. Lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer and thou be cast into prison. Verily, I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.

“Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, ‘Thou shalt not commit adultery:’ but I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. And if thy right eye offend thee pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. It hath been said, 'Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorce-ment:' but I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery.

"Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, 'Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths:' but I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne: nor by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King. Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. But let your communication be, 'Yea, yea;' 'Nay, nay:' for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil.

"Ye have heard that it hath been said, 'An eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth:' but I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloak also. And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain. Give to him that asketh thee. From him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away, and of him that taketh away thy goods ask them not again. And as ye would that men should do unto you, do ye also to them likewise.

"Ye have heard that it hath been said, 'Thou shalt love thy neighbour and hate thine enemy.' But I say unto you,

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them that despitefully use you and persecute you; that ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth his rain on the just and on the unjust. For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? for even the publicans and sinners love those that love them. And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same. And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much again. And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others? do not even the publicans so? But love your enemies, and do good and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil. Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful. Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

*After this manner therefore pray ye*

“Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them; otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven. Therefore when thou doest thine alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, they have their reward. But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth: that thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret himself shall reward thee openly.

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

“And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues, and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, they have their reward. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him.

“After this manner therefore pray ye: ‘Our Father which art in heaven, hallowed by thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: for thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.’ For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: but if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

“Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face; that thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly.

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

*Seek ye first the Kingdom of God*

“Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: for where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness!

“No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon. Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment? Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they? Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit to his stature? And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin: and yet I say unto you, that even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which today is, and tomorrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith? Therefore, take no thought, saying ‘What shall we eat?’ or, ‘What shall we drink?’ or ‘Wherewithal shall we

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

be clothed?' For after all these things do the Gentiles seek; for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things.

"But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you. Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

### *Judge not, that ye be not judged*

"Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: give, and it shall be given unto you: good measure, pressed down, shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with what measure ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye meet, it shall be measured to you again.

"And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, and perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Or how canst thou say to thy brother, 'Let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye,' when thou thyself beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam that is in thine own eye, and then thou shalt see clearly to pull out the mote that is in thy brother's eye.

"Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you.

"Ask and it shall be given you; seek and ye shall find; knock and it shall be opened unto you: for everyone that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

that knocketh it shall be opened. Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will give him a stone? Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him? Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do unto you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.

“Enter in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.

*He taught them as one having authority*

“Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep’s clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns or figs of thistles? Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. A good man, out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is good; and an evil man, out of the evil treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is evil: for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. Wherefore by their fruits shall ye know them.

“Not everyone that saith unto me, ‘Lord, Lord,’ shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. And why call ye me,

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

‘Lord, Lord,’ and do not the things which I say? Many will say to me in that day, ‘Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? And in thy name cast out devils?’ And then will I profess unto them, ‘I never knew you: depart from me ye that work iniquity.’

“Therefore whosoever cometh to me, and heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built a house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock: and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not, for it was founded upon a rock. And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it.”

And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes.

### *I also am a man set under authority*

Now when he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, and was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him. And he entered into Capernaum. And a certain centurion’s servant who was dear unto him was sick and ready to die. And when the centurion heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of the Jews beseeching him that he would come and heal his servant, saying, “Lord, my servant lieth at home sick of the palsy, grievously tormented.”

And when they came to Jesus, they besought him in-

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

stantly, saying that he was worthy for whom he should do this: "For he loveth our nation, and hath built us a synagogue."

And Jesus saith,

"I will come and heal him."

Then Jesus went with them. And when he was not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying unto him,

"Lord, trouble not thyself; for I am not worthy that thou shouldest come under my roof: wherefore neither thought I myself worthy to come unto thee: but speak the word only, and my servant shall be healed. For I also am a man set under authority, having soldiers under me: and I say unto one, 'Go,' and he goeth; and to another, 'Come,' and he cometh; and to my servant, 'Do this,' and he doeth it."

When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that followed him,

"Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel. And I say unto you, Many shall come from the east and from the west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven: but the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."

And Jesus said unto them,

"Go thy way; say unto the centurion, 'As thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee.' "

And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole that had been sick, for he was healed in the selfsame hour.

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

*And John heard in prison the works of Christ*

And it came to pass the day after, that he went into a city called Nain; and many of his disciples went with him, and much people. Now when he came nigh to the gate of the city, behold, there was a man carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the city was with her.

And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her,

“Weep not.”

And he came and touched the bier: and they that bare him stood still.

And he said,

“Young man, I say unto thee, Arise.”

And he that was dead sat up, and began to speak. And he delivered him to his mother. And there came a fear on all: and they glorified God, saying that a great prophet is risen up among us; and, that God hath visited his people. And this rumour of him went forth throughout all Judæa, and throughout all the region round about.

And the disciples of John showed him of all these things.

THE AUTUMN OF A.D. 28  
JESUS' MINISTRY IN GALILEE  
PROVES HIM TO BE THE CHRIST



**N**OW when John heard in prison the works of Christ, he called unto him two of his disciples and sent them to Jesus, saying, "Art thou he that should come? or look we for another?"

When the men were come into him, they said, "John Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, 'Art thou he that should come? or look we for another?'" And in the same hour he cured many of their infirmities and plagues, and of evil spirits; and unto many that were blind he gave sight.

*Go and tell John what ye have seen and heard*

Then Jesus answering said unto them, "Go your way, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard; how that the blind see, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, and the poor have the gospel preached to them. And blessed is he whosoever shall not be offended in me."

And when the messengers of John were departed he began to say unto the multitude concerning John:

"What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind? But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they which are

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

gorgeously apparelled, and live delicately, are in kings houses. But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and more than a prophet. For this is he of whom it is written, 'Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.' Verily I say unto you, among those that are born of women there hath not risen a greater prophet than John the Baptist: but he that is least in the kingdom of God is greater than he. And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force. For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. And if ye will receive it, this is Elijah, which was for to come. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear." And all the people that heard him, and the publicans, justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John. But the pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of God against themselves, being not baptized of him.

And the Lord said,

"Whereunto then shall I liken the men of this generation? and to what are they like? They are like unto children sitting in the market place, and calling one to another, and saying, 'We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned to you, and ye have not wept.' For John the Baptist came neither eating bread nor drinking wine; and ye say, 'He hath a devil.' And the Son of Man is come eating and drinking; and ye say, 'Behold a gluttonous man, and a wine-bibber, a friend of publicans and sinners!' But wisdom is justified of all her children."

Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not:

"Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida!

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

for if the mighty works which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you. And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day. But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee."

*Come unto me, and I will give you rest*

At that time Jesus answered and said,

"I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes. Even so, Father; for so it seemed good in thy sight. All things are delivered unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him. Come unto me all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light."

And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to meat. And, behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew that Jesus sat at meat in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster box of ointment, and stood at his feet behind him weeping, and began to wash

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

his feet with tears, and did wipe them v. h the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with ointment.

Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him saw it, he spake within himself, saying, 'This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who and what manner of woman this is that toucheth him: for she is a sinner.'

And Jesus answering, said unto him,

"Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee."

And he said, "Master, say on."

"There was a certain creditor which had two debtors: the one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty. And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will love him most?"

Simon answered and said,

"I suppose that he, to whom he forgave most."

And he said unto him,

"Thou hast rightly judged."

And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon,

"Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head. Thou gavest me no kiss: but this woman, since the time I came in hath not ceased to kiss my feet. My head with oil thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment. Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little."

And he saith unto her,

"Thy sins are forgiven."

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

And they that sat at meat with him began to say within themselves, 'Who is this that forgiveth sins also?'

And he said unto the woman,

"Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace."

*The Kingdom of God is come unto you*

And it came to pass afterward, that he went throughout every city and village, preaching and showing the glad tidings of the kingdom of God: and the twelve were with him, and certain women which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities: Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven devils, and Joanna the wife of Chuza, Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministered unto him of their substance.

And they went into a house. And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread. And when his friends heard of it, they went out to lay hold on him: for they said,

"He is beside himself."

Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blind, and dumb: and he healed him, insomuch that the blind and dumb both spake and saw. And all the people were amazed, and said,

"Is not this the son of David?"

But the scribes and Pharisees which came down from Jerusalem said,

"This fellow hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the devils casteth he out devils."

But he, knowing their thoughts, called them unto him, and said,

"How can Satan cast out Satan? For every kingdom

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city and house divided against itself falleth. And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how then shall his kingdom stand? because ye say that I cast out devils by Beelzebub. And if I, by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore shall they be your judges. But if I with the finger of God, and by the Spirit of God, cast out devils, then no doubt the kingdom of God is come unto you. No man can enter into a strong man's house and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man; and then he will spoil his house. For when a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace: but when a stronger than he come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils. He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth abroad.

“When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and finding none. Then he saith, ‘I will return unto my house from whence I came out.’ And when he cometh, he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished. Then goeth he, and taketh to himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation.

“Wherefore I say unto you, All sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and blasphemies wherewith soever they shall blaspheme: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come. He that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal condemnation. Because they said, 'He hath an unclean spirit.'

"Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by his fruit. O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure bringeth forth evil things. But I say unto you, that every idle word that a man shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned."

And it came to pass, as he spake these things, a certain woman of the company lifted up her voice, and said unto him,

"Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked."

But he said,

"Yea, rather, blessed are they that hear the word of God and keep it."

While he yet talked to the people, there came his brethren and his mother, and, standing without, sent unto him, calling him; for they could not come at him for the press.

And the multitude sat about him, and one of them said unto him,

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

“Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee.”

But he answered and said unto him that told him, “Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?”

And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said,

“Behold my mother and my brethren! For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother. My mother and my brethren are these which hear the word of God, and do it.”

### *The mysteries of the Kingdom of God*

The same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea side: and there was gathered unto him a great multitude out of every city, so that he entered into a ship, and sat; and the whole multitude stood on the shore. And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying,

“Behold, a sower went forth to sow: and it came to pass as he sowed, some fell by the wayside, and it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it. And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth; and immediately it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth: but when the sun was up, it was scorched; and because it lacked moisture, and had no root, it withered away. And some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up and choked it, and it yielded no fruit. And other fell on good ground, and did yield fruit that sprang up and increased, and brought forth, some thirty, some sixty, and some a hundredfold.” And he said unto them, “He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.”

Another parable put he forth unto them, saying,

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

“So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground; and should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how. For the earth bringeth forth fruit of herself; first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear. But when the fruit is brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the harvest is come.”

Again he said unto them,

“The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field: but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way. But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, ‘Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?’ He said unto them, ‘An enemy hath done this.’ The servants said unto him, ‘Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?’ But he said, ‘Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them into bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.’ ”

And he said,

“Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God? or with what comparison shall we compare it? It is like a grain of mustard seed, which, when it is sown in the earth, is less than all the seeds that be in the earth: but when it is sown, it groweth up and becometh greater than all herbs, and shooteth out great branches, and becometh a tree, so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.”

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

Another parable spake he unto them,  
“The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.”

And with many such parables spake he the word unto them, as they were able to hear it. But without a parable spake he not unto them: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, “I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world.”

*Have ye understood all these things?*

And Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house; and when they were alone, he expounded all things unto his disciples. And the disciples came, and said unto him, “Why speakest thou unto them in parables?”

He answered and said unto them,

“Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God: but unto them that are without, all these things are done in parables: that seeing they may see, and not perceive; and hearing they may hear, and not understand. And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, which saith, ‘By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive; for this people’s heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.’ But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear. For verily I say unto you that many prophets and righteous men have

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them."

And they that were about him with the twelve asked him of the parable of the sower.

And he said unto them,

"Know ye not this parable? and how then will ye know all parables? The seed is the word of God. Those by the wayside are they that hear the word of the kingdom, and understand it not; but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediately and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts, lest they should believe and be saved. They on the stony ground are they which, when they hear the word, immediately receive it with gladness, and have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward, when affliction or persecution ariseth for the word's sake, immediately they are offended, and fall away. And that which fell among thorns are they, which, when they have heard, go forth, and are choked with the cares and riches and pleasures of this life, and bring no fruit to perfection. But that on the good ground are they, which in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, understand it and keep it, and bring forth fruit with patience, some thirty, some sixty, and some a hundredfold."

And he said unto them,

"No man, when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth it under a bed; but setteth it on a candle-stick, that they which enter in may see the light. For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest; neither anything hid, that shall not be known and come abroad. If any man have ears to hear, let him hear."

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

And he said unto them,

“Take heed what ye hear. With what measure ye meet, it shall be measured to you; and unto you that hear shall more be given. For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away, even that which he seemeth to have.”

And his disciples came unto him, saying,

“Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field.”

He answered and said unto them,

“He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; the field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one; the enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world. The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; and shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

“Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field; the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

“Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchantman, seeking goodly pearls: who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

“Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind: which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and set down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away. So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just, and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.”

Jesus said unto them,

“Have ye understood all these things?”

They say unto him,

“Yea, Lord.”

Then said he unto them,

“Therefore every scribe which is instructed in the kingdom of heaven, is like unto a man that is a householder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old.”

And it came to pass that when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed thence.

*The storm is stilled, and the demoniac liberated*

And the same day, when the even was come, he saith unto them,

“Let us go over unto the other side of the lake.”

And when they had sent away the multitude, they took him even as he was in the ship. And there were also with him other little ships; and they launched forth. And there came down a great storm of wind on the lake, and the waves beat into the ship so that it was now full. And he was in the hinder part of the ship, asleep on a pillow.

And they came to him, and awoke him, saying,

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

“Master, Master, save us! carest thou not that we perish?”

And he arose, and rebuked the wind, and the raging of the water, and said unto the sea,

“Peace, be still.”

And the wind ceased, and there was a great calm.

And he said unto them,

“Why are ye so fearful? how is it that ye have no faith?”

And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another,

“What manner of man is this, that even the wind and the waves obey him?”

And they came over unto the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gadarenes. And when he was come out of the ship, immediately there met him out of the tombs a man possessed with devils, who had his dwelling among the tombs; and was exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass that way. And he ware no clothes, neither abode in any house, and no man could bind him, no, not with chains: because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any man tame him. And he was driven of the devil into the wilderness, and always, night and day, he was in the mountains and in the tombs crying, and cutting himself with stones.

But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran, and fell down before him, and cried with a loud voice, and said,

“What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the most high God? I adjure thee by God that thou torment me not.”

For he said unto him,

“Come out of the man, thou unclean spirit.”

And he asked him,

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

“What is thy name?”

And he answered, saying,

“My name is Legion: for we are many. Art thou come to torment us before the time?” And they besought him that he would not command them to go out into the deep, nor send them away out of the country.

Now there was there, nigh unto the mountains, a great herd of swine feeding. And all the devils besought him, saying,

“If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine, that we may enter into them.”

And he said unto them,

“Go.”

And the unclean spirits went out, and entered into the swine; and the whole herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea (they were about two thousand), and they perished in the waters.

And when they that fed them saw what was done, they fled, and went their ways into the city, and the country, and told everything, and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils. And, behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus. And when they saw him that was possessed with the devil, and had the legion, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right mind, they were afraid. And they also that saw it, told them by what means he was healed, and also concerning the swine.

Then the whole multitude of the country of the Gadarenes round about besought him to depart from them; for they were taken with great fear. And when he was come into the ship, the man out of whom the devils were departed, prayed him that he might be

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

with him. Howbeit Jesus suffered him not, but saith unto him,

“Go home to thy friends, and to thine own house, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee.”

And he went his way and published throughout the whole city, and in Decapolis, how great things Jesus had done for him; and all men did marvel.

### *The dead are raised, and the diseased cured*

And it came to pass when Jesus returned, the people gladly received him: for they were all waiting for him. And, behold, there came a man named Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue; and when he saw him, he fell down at Jesus' feet, and besought him greatly, saying,

“My little daughter lieth at the point of death: I pray thee, come and lay thy hands upon her, that she may be healed; and she shall live.” And Jesus arose and followed him, and so did his disciples.

But as he went the people thronged him. And a certain woman, which had an issue of blood twelve years, and had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse; when she had heard of Jesus, came in the press behind him, and touched the border of his garment.

For she said,

“If I may but touch his clothes, I shall be whole.”

And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up; and she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague.

And Jesus said,

“Who touched me?”

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

When all denied, Peter and they that were with him, said, "Master, thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, 'Who touched me?'"

And Jesus said,

"Somebody hath touched me: for I perceive that virtue is gone out of me."

And when the woman saw that she was not hid, she came trembling, and falling down before him, she told him all the truth, and declared unto him before all the people for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately.

And he said unto her,

"Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith had made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole of thy plague."

While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying to him,

"Thy daughter is dead; why troublest thou the Master any further?"

But as soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he saith unto the ruler of the synagogue,

"Be not afraid, only believe, and she shall be made whole."

And he suffered no man to follow him, save Peter, and James and John the brother of James. And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly; and the minstrels, and the people making a noise, and he said unto them,

"Give place: why make ye this ado, and weep? the damsel is not dead but sleepeth." And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead.

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

But when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and entereth in where the damsel was lying.

And he took her by the hand, and said unto her,

“Talitha cumi,” which is, being interpreted, “Damsel, I say unto thee, Arise.” And her spirit came again, and she arose straightway, and walked; for she was of the age of twelve years.

And they were astonished with a great astonishment. And he charged them straitly that they should tell no man what was done; and commanded that something should be given her to eat. And the fame thereof went abroad into all that land.

*The blind see, and the dumb speak*

And when Jesus departed thence, two blind men followed him, crying, and saying,

“Thou son of David, have mercy upon us.”

And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus said unto them,

“Believe ye that I am able to do this?”

They said unto him,

“Yea, Lord.”

Then touched he their eyes, saying,

“According to your faith be it unto you.”

And their eyes were opened; and Jesus straightway charged them, saying,

“See that no man know it.”

But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that country.

As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumb

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

man possessed with a devil. And when the devil was cast out, the dumb spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, "It was never so in Israel."

But the Pharisees said,

"He casteth out devils, through the prince of the devils."

And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness and every disease among the people. But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd.

Then said he unto his disciples,

"The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few; pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest."

### *The poor have the Gospel preached to them*

Then he called his twelve disciples together, and began to send them forth by two and two; and gave them power and authority over unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease.

Now the names of the twelve apostles are these: the first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother; Philip, and Bartholomew; Thomas, and Matthew the publican; James the son of Alphæus and Lebbæus, whose surname was Thaddæus; Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him. These twelve Jesus sent forth to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal the sick.

And he commanded them, saying,

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

“Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not: but go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. And as ye go, preach, saying, ‘The kingdom of heaven is at hand.’ Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils; freely ye have received, freely give.”

And he said unto them,

“Take nothing for your journey, neither staves, nor scrip, neither bread, neither money, neither have two coats apiece; but be shod with sandals, and take a staff only: for the workman is worthy of his meat. And into whatsoever city or town ye shall enter, inquire who in it is worthy, and there abide till ye depart from that place. And when ye come into a house, salute it. And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you. And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, when ye depart out of that house or city, shake off the very dust from your feet for a testimony against them. Verily, I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment, than for that city.

“Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues; and ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles. But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak. For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you. And the brother shall

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

deliver up brother to death, and the father the child: and the children shall rise up against their parents, and cause them to be put to death. And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved. But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come.

"The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord. It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household? Fear them not therefore: for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known. What I tell you in darkness, that speak ye in light; and what ye hear in the ear, that preach ye upon the housetops. And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both body and soul in hell. Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father. But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows. Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven. But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

"Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I am not come to send peace, but a sword. For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. And a man's foes shall be they of his own

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

household. He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it.

“He that receiveth you receiveth me; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me. He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophet’s reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall receive a righteous man’s reward. And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones, a cup of cold water only in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.”

And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities. And the disciples went out, and preached that men should repent. And they cast out many devils, and anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them.

THE SPRING OF A.D. 29

THE FEAST OF THE PASSOVER WAS NIGH  
AND JESUS WENT UP TO JERUSALEM



NOW at that time Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus, and of all that was done by him, for his name was spread abroad: and he was perplexed, because that it was said of some, that John was risen from the dead; and of some that Elijah had appeared; and of others, that one of the old prophets was risen again.

*John have I beheaded, but who is this?*

But when Herod heard thereof, he said,

“John have I beheaded; but who is this, of whom I hear such things?” And he said unto his servants, “This is John the Baptist; he is risen from the dead; and therefore mighty works do show forth themselves in him.” And he desired to see him.

For Herod had laid hold on John, and bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias’ sake, his brother Philip’s wife; for he had married her. For John had said unto Herod, “It is not lawful for thee to have thy brother’s wife.” Therefore Herodias had a quarrel against him, and would have killed him; but she could not: for Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just man and a holy, and observed him, and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly; and he feared the multitude, because they counted him as a prophet.

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

But when Herod's birthday was kept, and he made a supper to his lords, high captains, and chief estates of Galilee, the daughter of Herodias danced before them, and pleased Herod, and them that sat with him. And the king said unto the damsel,

"Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give it thee." And he sware unto her, "Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give it thee, unto the half of my kingdom."

And she went forth, and said unto her mother,  
"What shall I ask?"

And she said,  
"The head of John the Baptist."

And she came in straightway unto the king, and asked, saying,

"I will that thou give me by and by in a charger the head of John the Baptist."

And the king was exceeding sorry; yet for his oath's sake, and them which sat with him at meat, he would not reject her, but commanded it to be given her.

And immediately the king sent an executioner, and commanded his head to be brought: and he went out and beheaded him in prison, and brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel; and the damsel gave it to her mother.

And when his disciples heard of it, they came and took up his corpse, and laid it in a tomb, and went and told Jesus. And when Jesus heard of it, he departed by ship into a desert place apart.

*This is of a truth that Prophet*

And the apostles when they returned, gathered themselves together unto Jesus, and told him of all things, both

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

what they had done, and what they had taught. And he said unto them,

“Come ye yourselves apart into a desert place, and rest awhile:” for there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat. And they departed privately by ship, over the sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tiberias, into a desert place belonging to the city of Bethsaida.

And the people saw him departing, and many knew him and ran afoot thither out of all the cities, and outwent them, and came together unto him; and a great multitude followed him, because they saw his miracles which he did on them that were diseased. And Jesus was moved with compassion towards them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd: and he received them, and spake unto them of the kingdom of God, and healed them that had need of healing.

And the passover, a feast of the Jews, was nigh.

And when the day was now far spent, Jesus saith unto Philip,

“Whence shall we buy bread, that these may eat?” And this he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do.

Philip answered him,

“Two hundred pennyworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little.”

Then came the twelve, and said unto him,

“This is a desert place, and the time is now passed, send the multitude away, that they may go into the country round about and into the villages, and buy themselves bread.”

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

But Jesus said unto them,

“They need not depart; give ye them to eat.”

And they say unto him,

“Shall we go and buy two hundred pennyworth of bread, and give them to eat?”

And he said unto them,

“How many loaves have ye? Go and see.”

One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter’s brother, saith unto him,

“There is a lad here, which hath five barley loaves, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many?”

And Jesus said,

“Make the men sit down.”

Now there was much grass in the place. So the men sat down in number about five thousand. And Jesus took the loaves, and looking up to heaven he gave thanks, and blessed and brake the loaves, and gave them to his disciples, and the disciples to them that were set down; and likewise the fishes, as much as they would.

And when they were filled, he said unto his disciples,

“Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.” Therefore they gathered them together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley loaves, which remained over and above unto them that had eaten.

Then those men, when they had seen the miracles that Jesus did, said,

“This is of a truth that Prophet that should come into the world.”

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

*Of a truth Thou art the Son of God*

When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come and take him by force to make him a king, straightway he constrained his disciples to get into a ship, and to go before him unto the other side, and he departed alone into a mountain to pray.

And they entered into a ship, and went over the sea toward Capernaum. And it was now dark, and Jesus was not come unto them. And the sea arose by reason of a great wind that blew. And he saw them toiling in rowing; for the wind was contrary unto them. And in the fourth watch of the night, when they had rowed about five and twenty or thirty furlongs, he cometh unto them, walking upon the sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship.

And they cried out for fear, saying,

“It is a spirit:” for they all saw him, and were troubled.

But he said unto them,

“Be of good cheer: it is I; be not afraid.”

And Peter answered him, and said,

“Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water.”

And he said,

“Come.”

And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Jesus. But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried,

“Lord, save me.”

And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him and said unto him,

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

“O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?”

And when they were come into the ship the wind ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondered. For they considered not the miracle of the loaves; for their heart was hardened. Then they that were in the ship came and worshipped him, saying,

“Of a truth thou art the Son of God.”

### *I am the Bread of Life*

The day following, when they had passed over, they came to the land of Gennesaret, and drew to the shore. And when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knew him, and sent out into all that region round about, and brought unto him all that were diseased; and besought him that they might only touch the hem of his garment: and as many as touched were made perfectly whole.

And when the people, which stood on the other side of the sea, saw that there was no boat there, save that one wherinto his disciples were entered, and that Jesus went not with his disciples into the boat, but that his disciples were gone away alone (howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias nigh unto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had given thanks): when the people therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also took shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Jesus.

And when they had found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him,

“Rabbi, when camest thou hither?”

Jesus answered them and said,

“Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled. Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give you: for him hath God the Father sealed.”

Then they said unto him,

“What shall we do, that we might work the works of God?”

Jesus answered and said unto them,

“This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.”

They said therefore unto him,

“What sign shovest thou then, that we may see, and believe thee? what dost thou work? Our fathers did eat manna in the desert; as it is written, ‘He gave them bread from heaven to eat.’”

Then Jesus said unto them,

“Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven. For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world.”

Then said they unto him,

“Lord, evermore give us this bread.”

And Jesus said unto them,

“I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst. But I said unto you, that ye also have seen me, and believe not. All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out. For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. And this is the Father’s will which

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day. And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.”

The Jews then murmured at him, because he said, “I am the bread which came down from heaven.” And they said,

“Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how is it then that he saith, ‘I came down from heaven’?”

Jesus therefore answered and said unto them,

“Murmur not among yourselves. No man can come to me except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. It is written in the prophets, ‘And they shall be all taught of God.’ Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me. Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father.

“Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life. I am the bread of life. Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead. This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die. I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever; and the bread which I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.”

*These things he said in the Synagogue in Capernaum*

The Jews therefore strove among themselves, saying,  
“How can this man give us his flesh to eat?”

Then Jesus said unto them,

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

“Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed. He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him. As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father; so he that eateth me, even he shall live by me. This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread shall live for ever.”

These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum. Many therefore of his disciples when they had heard this said,

“This is a hard saying; who can hear it?”

When Jesus knew in himself that his disciples murmured at it, he said unto them,

“Doth this offend you? What and if ye shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before? It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life. But there are some of you that believe not.” For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who should betray him. And he said,

“Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me except it were given unto him of my Father.”

From that time many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him. Then said Jesus unto the twelve,

“Will ye also go away?”

Then Simon Peter answered him,

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

“Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life. And we believe and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God.”

Jesus answered them,

“Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil?”

He spake of Judas Iscariot the son of Simon: for he it was that should betray him; being one of the twelve.

*The Passover, a feast of the Jews, was nigh*

After this there was a feast of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep market a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five porches. In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water. For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.

And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight years. When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time in that case, he saith unto him,

“Wilt thou be made whole?”

The impotent man answered him,

“Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me.”

Jesus saith unto him,

“Rise, take up thy bed, and walk.”

And immediately the man was made whole, and took

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

up his bed, and walked: and on the same day was the sabbath.

The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured,

“It is the sabbath day: it is not lawful for thee to carry thy bed.”

He answered them,

“He that made me whole, the same said unto me, ‘Take up thy bed, and walk.’”

Then asked they him,

“What man is this which said unto thee, ‘Take up thy bed and walk?’” And he that was healed wist not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed himself away, a multitude being in that place.

Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him,

“Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee.”

The man departed, and told the Jews that it was Jesus, which had made him whole. And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the sabbath day.

### *My Father worketh and I work (on the sabbath)*

But Jesus answered them,

“My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.”

Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not only had broken the sabbath, but said also that God was his Father, making himself equal with God.

Then answered Jesus and said unto them,

“Verily, verily, I say unto you, the Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise. For the Father loveth the Son, and showeth him all things that himself doeth: and he will show him greater works than these, that ye may marvel. For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them; even so the Son quickeneth whom he will. For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son: that all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son, honoureth not the Father which hath sent him.

“Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death into life.

“Verily, verily, I say unto you, the hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. For as the Father hath life in himself: so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself; and hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man. Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of condemnation. I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.

### *The works that I do bear witness of me*

“If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not true. There is another that beareth witness of me; and I know that the witness which he witnesseth of me is true. Ye sent

## THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD IS UPON ME

unto John, and he bare witness unto the truth. But I receive not testimony from man: but these things I say, that ye might be saved. He was a burning and shining light: and ye were willing for a season to rejoice in his light. But I have greater witness than that of John: for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me. And the Father himself, which hath sent me, hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape. And ye have not his word abiding in you: for whom he hath sent, him ye believe not.

“Ye search the Scriptures; [R.V.] for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me. And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life. I receive not honour from men. But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you. I am come in my Father’s name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only? Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust. For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: for he wrote of me. But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?”

*If any man will to do His will*

And the Jews marvelled, saying,

“How knoweth this man letters, having never learned?”

Jesus answered them, and said,

“My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me. If any man will to do his will, he shall know of the doctrine,

## CHRIST PROCLAIMS THE NEW ORDER

whether it be of God, or whether I speak of myself. He that speaketh of himself seeketh his own glory: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him. Did not Moses give you the law, and yet none of you keepeth the law. Why do ye go about to kill me?"

The people answered and said,

"Thou hast a devil: who goeth about to kill thee?"

Jesus answered and said unto them,

"I have done one work, and ye all marvel. Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision (not because it is of Moses, but of the fathers); and ye, on the sabbath day circumcise a man. If a man on the sabbath day receive circumcision, that the law of Moses should not be broken; are ye angry at me, because I have made a man every whit whole on the sabbath day? Judge not according to appearance, but judge righteous judgment."

After these things Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jewry, because the Jews sought to kill him.

# CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

IV.

*On this rock will I build my Church*

*Who hath believed our report? and to whom is the arm of the LORD revealed? . . . He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not. Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities; the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all. He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth. He was taken from prison and from judgment: and who shall declare his generation? for he was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgressions of my people was he stricken.*

*The Prophecy of Isaiah  
Chapter 53, 700 B.C.*

THE SUMMER OF A.D. 29  
AND A JOURNEY TO JERUSALEM FOR  
THE AUTUMN FEAST OF TABERNACLES



THEN came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, which came from Jerusalem. And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with defiled, that is to say, with unwashen hands, they found fault. For the Pharisees and all the Jews, except they wash their hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders. And when they come from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups, and pots, and brazen vessels, and of tables.

*Defilement from without and from within*

Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him,

“Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread.”

But he answered and said unto them,

“Well did Isaiah prophesy of you hypocrites, saying, ‘This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me. But in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.’ For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do."

And he said unto them,

"Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition. For Moses said, 'Honour thy father and thy mother;' and, 'whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death.' But ye say, 'If any man shall say unto his father or mother, "It is Corban, that is to say a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me;" he shall be free.' And ye suffer him no more to do aught for his father or mother; making the word of God of none effect by your tradition."

And when he had called the people unto him, he said unto them,

"Hearken unto me every one of you, and understand. Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man; but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man. If any man have ears to hear let him hear."

And when he was entered into the house from the people, his disciples said unto him,

"Knowest thou not that the Pharisees were offended, after they heard this saying?"

But he answered and said,

"Every plant which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up. Let them alone: they be blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch."

Then answered Peter and said unto him,

"Declare unto us this parable."

And Jesus said,

"Are ye also without understanding? Do ye not yet

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

understand that whatsoever entereth in at the mouth cannot defile a man; because it entereth not into his heart, but into the belly, and is cast out into the draught, purging all meats? But those things which proceed out of the mouth come from the heart; and they defile the man. For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murder, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies: these are the things which defile a man. But to eat with unwashen hands defileth not a man.”

### *The Jewish prophet, and the Gentile woman*

And Jesus went thence and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, and entered into a house, and would have no man know it: but he could not be hid. For a certain woman, whose young daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feet: the woman was a Greek, a Syrophenician by nation; and she besought him saying,

“O Lord, thou Son of David, my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil.” And he answered her not a word.

And his disciples came and besought him, saying,  
“Send her away; for she crieth after us.”

But he answered and said,

“I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.”

Then came she and worshipped him, saying,  
“Lord, help me.”

But Jesus said unto her,

“Let the children first be filled: for it is not meet to take the children’s bread, and to cast it unto the dogs.”

And she said,

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

“Truth, Lord: yet the dogs under the table eat the children’s crumbs.”

Then Jesus answered and said unto her,

“O woman, great is thy faith; be it unto thee even as thou wilt. For this saying go thy way; the devil is gone out of thy daughter.”

And when she was come to her house, she found the devil gone out, and her daughter laid upon the bed; for she was made whole from that very hour.

And again departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis. And he went up into a mountain, and sat down there. And great multitudes came unto him, having with them those that were lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus’ feet; and he healed them: insomuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blind to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.

And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech; and they beseech him to put his hand upon him. And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue; and looking up to heaven he sighed, and saith unto him,

“Ephphatha,” that is, “Be opened.”

And straightway his ears were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain. And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published it; and were beyond measure astonished, saying,

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

“He hath done all things well: he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.”

### *The loaves and the leaven of the Pharisees*

In these days the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples unto him, and said unto them,

“I have compassion on the multitude, because they have now been with me three days, and have nothing to eat: and if I send them away fasting to their own houses, they will faint by the way.” For divers of them came from far.

And his disciples answered him,

“From whence can a man satisfy these men with bread here in the wilderness?”

And he asked them,

“How many loaves have ye?”

“And they say,

“Seven.”

And he commanded the people to sit down on the ground: and he took the seven loaves, and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his disciples to set before the people. And they had a few small fishes: and he blessed, and he commanded to set them also before them. So they did eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left seven baskets. And they that did eat were about four thousand men, besides women and children.

And he sent away the multitude, and took ship, and came into the coasts of Magdala. And the Pharisees came forth with the Sadducees, and began to question with him, seeking of him a sign from heaven, tempting him.

He answered and said unto them,

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

“When it is evening, ye say, ‘It will be fair weather to-day: for the sky is red and lowering.’ O ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky; but can ye not discern the signs of the times?” And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, “Why doth this wicked and adulterous generation seek after a sign? Verily I say unto you, there shall no sign be given unto this generation, but the sign of the prophet Jonah.” And he left them, and entered into the ship again and departed to the other side.

Now the disciples had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ship with them more than one loaf. And he charged them, saying,

“Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and the Sadducees, and of the leaven of Herod.”

And they reasoned among themselves, saying,

“It is because we have taken no bread.”

And when Jesus knew it, he saith unto them,

“O ye of little faith; why reason ye among yourselves, because ye have brought no bread? perceive ye not yet, neither understand? have ye your heart yet hardened? Having eyes, see ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember?

“When I brake the five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up?”

They say unto him,

“Twelve.”

“And when the seven among the four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up?”

And they said,

“Seven.”

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

And he said unto them,

“How is it that ye do not understand that I spake it not unto you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees?”

Then understood they how that he bade them not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

And he cometh to Bethsaida; and they bring a blind man unto him, and besought him to touch him. And he took the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the town; and when he had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him if he saw aught.

And he looked up and said,

“I see men as trees, walking.”

After that he put his hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up; and he was restored, and saw every man clearly.

And he sent him away to his house, saying,

“Neither go into the town, nor tell it to any in the town.”

*On this Rock will I build my Church*

And Jesus went out, and his disciples, into the towns of Cæsarea Philippi. And it came to pass, as he was alone praying, he asked his disciples, saying,

“Whom do men say that I am?”

And they said,

“Some say that thou art John the Baptist; some Elijah; and others, Jeremiah, or one of the prophets.”

He said unto them,

“But whom say ye that I am?”

And Simon Peter answered and said,

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

“Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.”

And Jesus answered and said unto him,

“Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-Jona; for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. And I say unto thee, that thou art Peter, and upon this rock will I build my Church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.”

Then charged he his disciples that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ.

From that time Jesus began to show unto his disciples, how he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders and chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day.

And he spoke that saying openly. And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying,

“Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee.”

But he turned, and said unto Peter,

“Get thee behind me, Satan; thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men.”

And when he had called the people unto him with his disciples also, he said unto them,

“If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whosoever shall save his life shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel’s, the same shall find it. For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world and

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and my words in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed when he shall come in his own glory, and in the glory of his Father, with the holy angels. And then he shall reward every man according to his works."

And he said unto them,

"Verily, I say unto you, there be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power."

*This is my beloved Son: hear Him*

And after six days Jesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up into a high mountain apart by themselves: and he was transfigured before them. And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light. And, behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elijah: who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease which he should accomplish at Jerusalem.

But Peter and they that were with him were heavy with sleep: and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him. And it came to pass, as they departed from him, Peter said unto Jesus,

"Master, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles; one for thee, one for Moses, and one for Elijah." For he wist not what to say; for they were sore afraid.

While he thus spake, there came a bright cloud and over-

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

shadowed them: and a voice came out of the cloud, saying,

“This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him.”

And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid. And Jesus came and touched them, and said,

“Arise, and be not afraid.”

And when they lifted up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus only. And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying,

“Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be risen again from the dead.” And they kept that saying with themselves, questioning one with another what the rising from the dead should mean.

And they asked him, saying,

“Why then say the scribes that Elijah must first come?”

And he answered and told them,

“Elijah verily cometh first, and restoresth all things. But I say unto you, that Elijah is come already, and they know him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him. Likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them.”

Then the disciples understood that he spoke unto them of John the Baptist.

*The Son of man shall rise again*

And it came to pass, that on the next day, when they were come down from the hill, much people met him. And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great multitude

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

about them, and the scribes questioning with them. And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to him, saluted him.

And he asked the scribes,

“What question ye with them?”

And one of the multitude answered and said,

“Master, I have brought unto thee my son; for he is mine only child, and he is lunatic, and sore vexed. And, lo, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out; and it teareth him, that he foameth, and gnasheth with his teeth, and pineth away. And I besought thy disciples to cast him out, and they could not.”

Then Jesus answered and said,

“O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him unto me.”

And they brought him unto him: and when he saw him straightway the spirit tore him; and he fell on the ground and wallowed foaming.

And he asked his father,

“How long is it ago since this came unto him?”

And he said,

“Of a child. And oftentimes it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters, to destroy him: but if thou canst do anything, have compassion on us and help us.”

Jesus said unto him,

“If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth.”

And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with tears,

“Lord, I believe; help thou mine unbelief.”

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

When Jesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him,

“Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee, come out of him: and enter no more into him.”

And the spirit cried, and rent him sore, and came out of him: and he was as one dead; insomuch that many said, “He is dead.”

But Jesus took him by the hand, and lifted him up; and he arose, and he delivered him again to his father. And the child was cured from that very hour.

And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately,

“Why could we not cast him out?”

And Jesus said unto them,

“Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, ‘Remove hence into yonder place,’ and it shall remove: and nothing shall be impossible to you. Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting.”

And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God. But while they wondered everyone at all the things which Jesus did, he said unto his disciples,

“Let these sayings sink down into your ears: for the Son of man shall be delivered into the hands of men.”

And they departed thence, and passed through Galilee; and he would not that any man should know it. For he taught his disciples, and said unto them,

“The Son of man shall be delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him; and after that he is killed, he shall rise again the third day.”

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

And they were exceeding sorry. But they understood not this saying, and it was hid from them, and they perceived it not: and they were afraid to ask him.

### *Doth not your Master pay tribute?*

And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received tribute money came to Peter, and said,

“Doth not your Master pay tribute?”

He saith,

“Yes.”

And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying,

“What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers?”

Peter saith unto him,

“Of strangers.”

Jesus saith unto him,

“Then are the children free. Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast a hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up; and when thou has opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money: that take, and give it unto them for me and for thee.”

### *Who shall be the greatest?*

And being in the house, he asked his disciples,

“What was it that ye disputed among yourselves by the way?”

And they held their peace: for by the way they had disputed among themselves who should be the greatest. And

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

Jesus, perceiving the thought of their heart, sat down, and called the twelve, and saith unto them,

“If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and servant of all.”

And he called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them: and when he had taken him in his arms, he saith unto them,

“Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven. And whosoever shall receive one such little child in my name receiveth me; and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth him that sent me. For he that is least among you all, the same shall be great. And whosoever shall offend one of these little ones that believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

“Woe unto the world because of offences! for it must needs be that offences come; but woe unto that man by whom the offence cometh. Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire. And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire. For every one shall be salted with fire, and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt. Salt is good: but if the salt have lost his saltiness, wherewith will ye season it? Have salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another.

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

“Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, that in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven. For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost. How think ye? if a man have a hundred sheep, and one of them is gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and go into the mountains, and seek that which is gone astray? And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you he rejoiceth more of that sheep, than of the ninety and nine which went not astray. Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.”

And John answered him, saying,

“Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name; and we forbade him, because he followeth not with us.”

And Jesus said unto him,

“Forbid him not; for there is no man that shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me. For he that is not against us is for us. For whosoever shall give you a cup of cold water to drink in my name because ye belong to Christ, verily, I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward.

*How oft shall I forgive?*

“Moreover if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between him and thee alone, and if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as a heathen man and a publican. Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven; and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. Again I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching anything that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. For where two or three are gathered together in my name there am I in the midst of them.”

Then came Peter to him, and said,

“Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times?”

Jesus saith unto him,

“I say not unto thee, ‘Until seven times:’ but ‘Until seventy times seven.’ ”

And the apostles said unto him,

“Lord, increase our faith.”

And he said unto them,

“Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants. And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, ‘Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.’ Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow servants, which owed him a hundred pence:

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, ‘Pay me that thou owest.’ And his fellow servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, ‘Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.’ And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. So when his fellow servants saw what was done they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, ‘O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me: shouldst not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow servant, even as I had pity on thee?’ And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him. So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not everyone his brother their trespasses.”

### *He set his face to go to Jerusalem*

And it came to pass, that, when Jesus had finished these sayings, he departed. And when the time was come that he should be received up, he steadfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem.

Now the Jews’ feast of tabernacles was at hand. His brethren therefore said unto him,

“Depart hence, and go into Judæa, that thy disciples also may see the works that thou doest. For there is no man that doeth anything in secret, and he himself seeketh to be known openly. If thou do these things, show thyself to the world.” For neither did his brethren believe in him.

Then Jesus said unto them,

“My time is not yet come: but your time is always

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

ready. The world cannot hate you; but me it hateth, because I testify of it that the works thereof are evil. Go ye up unto the feast: I go not up unto this feast; for my time is not yet full come."

When he had said these words unto them, he abode still in Galilee. But when his brethren were gone up, then went he also up unto the feast, not openly, but as it were in secret.

And he sent messengers before his face: and they went, and entered into a village of the Samaritans, to make ready for him. And they did not receive him, because his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem. And when his disciples James and John saw this, they said,

"Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as Elijah did?"

But he turned, and rebuked them, and said,

"Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of. For the Son of man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save them."

And they went to another village.

And it came to pass, that, as they went in the way, a certain scribe came, and said unto him,

"Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest."

And Jesus said unto him,

"Foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head."

And he saith unto another,

"Follow me."

But he said,

"Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father."

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

Jesus said unto him,

“Let the dead bury their dead: but go thou and preach the kingdom of God.”

And another also said,

“Lord, I will follow thee; but let me first go bid them farewell, which are at home at my house.”

And Jesus said unto him,

“No man, having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.”

*Never man spake like this Man*

Then the Jews sought him at the feast, and said,

“Where is he?”

And there was much murmuring among the people concerning him: for some said,

“He is a good man.”

Others said,

“Nay; but he deceiveth the people.”

Howbeit no man spake openly of him for fear of the Jews.

Now about the midst of the feast Jesus went up into the temple, and taught.

Then said some of them of Jerusalem,

“Is not this he, whom they seek to kill? But, lo, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing unto him. Do the rulers know indeed that this is very Christ? Howbeit we know this man whence he is: but when Christ cometh, no man knoweth whence he is.”

Then cried Jesus in the temple as he taught, saying,

“Ye both know me, and ye know whence I am: and I

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

am not come of myself, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not. But I know him; for I am from him, and he hath sent me."

Then they sought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, because his hour was not yet come.

And many of the people believed on him, and said,

"When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than these which this man hath done?"

The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him; and the Pharisees and chief priests sent officers to take him.

Then said Jesus unto them,

"Yet a little while am I with you, and then I go unto him that sent me. Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, thither ye cannot come."

Then said the Jews among themselves,

"Whither will he go, that we shall not find him? will he go unto the dispersed among the Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles? What manner of saying is this that he said, 'Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and whither I am, thither ye cannot come?'"

In the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying,

"If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. He that believeth on me, as the Scripture hath said, out of his inmost being shall flow rivers of living water." But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet given; because Jesus was not yet glorified.

Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said,

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

“Of a truth this is the Prophet.”

Others said,

“This is the Christ.”

But some said,

“Shall Christ come out of Galilee? Hath not the Scripture said that Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was?”

So there was a division among the people because of him. And some of them would have taken him; but no man laid hands on him. Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said unto them,

“Why have ye not brought him?”

The officers answered,

“Never man spake like this man.”

Then answered them the Pharisees,

“Are ye also deceived? Have any of the rulers or of the Pharisees believed on him? But this people who knoweth not the law are cursed.”

Nicodemus saith unto them (he that came to Jesus by night, being one of them),

“Doth our law judge any man, before it hear him, and know what he doeth?”

They answered and said unto him,

“Art thou also of Galilee? Search, and look; for out of Galilee ariseth no prophet.”

And every man went unto his own house. Jesus went unto the mount of Olives.

*What sayest thou?*

And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him; and he sat down and

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

taught them. And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery; and when they had set her in the midst, they say unto him,

“Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act. Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou?” This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him.

But Jesus stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground, as though he heard them not. So when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them,

“He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.”

And again he stooped down and wrote on the ground. And they which heard it, being convicted by their own conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, even unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst. When Jesus lifted up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her,

“Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?”

She said,

“No man, Lord.”

And Jesus said unto her,

“Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more.”

*Who art thou?*

Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying,

“I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.”

The Pharisees therefore said unto him,

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

“Thou bearest record of thyself; thy record is not true.”  
Jesus answered and said unto them,

“Though I bear record of myself, yet my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whither I go. Ye judge after the flesh; I judge no man. And if I judge, my judgment is true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me. It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true. I am one that bear witness of myself, and the Father that sent me beareth witness of me.”

Then said they unto him,

“Where is thy Father?”

Jesus answered,

“Ye neither know me, nor my Father: if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also.”

These words spake Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him: for his hour was not yet come.

Then said Jesus again unto them,

“I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins: whither I go, ye cannot come.”

Then said the Jews,

“Will he kill himself? because he saith, ‘Whither I go, ye cannot come?’ ”

And he said unto them,

“Ye are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world. I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am he, ye shall die in your sins.”

Then said they unto him,

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

“Who art thou?”

And Jesus saith unto them,

“Even the same that I said unto you from the beginning. I have many things to say and to judge of you: but he that sent me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him.”

They understood not that he spake unto them of the Father.

Then said Jesus unto them,

“When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things. And he that sent me is with me: the Father hath not left me alone; for I do always those things that please him.”

As he spake these words many believed on him.

*Whom makest thou thyself?*

Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him,

“If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; and ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.”

They answered him,

“We be Abraham’s seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, ‘Ye shall be made free’?”

Jesus answered them,

“Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin. And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: but the Son abideth ever. If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed. I know that ye are Abraham’s seed; but ye seek to kill me, because my word hath no place in you. I speak that which I have

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

seen with my Father: and ye do that which ye have seen with your father."

They answered and said unto him,  
"Abraham is our father."

Jesus saith unto them,

"If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham. But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham. Ye do the deeds of your father."

Then said they unto him,  
"We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God."

Jesus said unto them,

"If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me. Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word. Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do: he was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth; because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own; for he is a liar, and the father of it. And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not. Which of you convinceth me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me? He that is of God heareth God's words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God."

Then answered the Jews,  
"Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil?"

Jesus answered,  
"I have not a devil; but I honour my Father, and ye do

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

dishonour me. And I seek not mine own glory: there is one that seeketh and judgeth. Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death."

Then said the Jews unto him,

"Now we know that thou hast a devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and thou sayest, 'If a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death.' Art thou greater than our father Abraham, which is dead? And the prophets are dead: whom maketh thou thyself?"

Jesus answered,

"If I honour myself, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me; of whom ye say, that he is your God: yet ye have not known him; but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a liar like unto you: but I know him, and keep his saying. Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day: and he saw it, and was glad."

Then said the Jews unto him,

"Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham?"

Jesus said unto them,

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I AM."

Then took they up stones to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.

*One thing I know: whereas I was blind, now I see*

And as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which was blind from his birth. And his disciples asked him, saying,

"Master, who did sin, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?"

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

Jesus answered,

“Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents; but that the works of God should be made manifest in him. I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.”

When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay, and said unto him,

“Go, wash in the pool of Siloam,” which is by interpretation, “Sent.”

He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing.

The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seen him that was blind, said,

“Is not this he that sat and begged?”

Some said,

“This is he.”

Others said,

“He is like him.”

But he said,

“I am he.”

Therefore said they unto him,

“How were thine eyes opened?”

He answered and said,

“A man that is called Jesus made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, ‘Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash;’ and I went and washed, and I received sight.”

Then said they unto him,

“Where is he?”

He said,

“I know not.”

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind. And it was the sabbath day when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes. Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them,

“He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see.”

Therefore said some of the Pharisees,

“This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the sabbath day.”

Others said,

“How can a man that is a sinner do such miracles?”  
And there was a division among them.

They say unto the blind man again,

“What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes?”

He said,

“He is a prophet.”

But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and received his sight, until they had called the parents of him that had received his sight. And they asked them, saying,

“Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? how then doth he now see?”

His parents answered them and said,

“We know that he is our son, and that he was born blind: but by what means he now seeth, we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not; he is of age; ask him: he shall speak for himself.”

These words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was the Christ, he should be put out of the

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

synagogue. Therefore said his parents, 'He is of age; ask him.'

Then again called they the man that was blind, and said unto him,

"Give God the praise: we know that the man is a sinner."

He answered and said,

"Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that whereas I was blind, now I see."

Then said they to him again,

"What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?"

He answered them,

"I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples?"

Then they reviled him, and said,

"Thou art his disciple; but we are Moses' disciples. We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not whence he is."

The man answered and said unto them,

"Why herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes. Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth. Since the world began it was not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind. If this man were not of God, he could do nothing."

They answered and said unto him,

"Thou wast altogether born in sin, and dost thou teach us?"

And they cast him out.

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

*Are we blind also?*

Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him,

“Dost thou believe on the Son of God?”

He answered and said,

“Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him?”

And Jesus said unto him,

“Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee.”

And he said,

“Lord, I believe.” And he worshipped him.

And Jesus said,

“For judgment am I come into the world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind.”

And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him,

“Are we blind also?”

Jesus said unto them,

“If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, ‘We see;’ therefore your sin remaineth.”

There was a division therefore again among the Jews for these sayings. And many of them said,

“He hath a devil, and is mad; why hear ye him?”

Others said,

“These are not the words of him that hath a devil. Can a devil open the eyes of the blind?”

THE AUTUMN OF A.D. 29  
AND A VISIT TO JERUSALEM FOR  
THE WINTER FEAST OF DEDICATION



AND Jesus came into the coasts of Judæa by the farther side of Jordan; and great multitudes followed him; and, as he was wont, he taught them again, and healed them there.

*Blessed are the eyes that see the things that ye see*

After these things the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them out two and two before his face, whither he himself would come. Therefore said he unto them,

“The harvest truly is great, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest. Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves. Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes: and salute no man by the way. And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, ‘Peace be to this house.’ And if the son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again. And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house. And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you: and heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, ‘The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.’”

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

“But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say, ‘Even the very dust of your city, which cleaveth unto us, we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding, be ye sure of this, that the Kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.’ But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city. ‘Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgment, than for you. And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven, shall be thrust down to hell.’

“He that heareth you, heareth me; and he that despiseth you, despiseth me: and he that despiseth me despiseth him that sent me.”

And the seventy returned again with joy, saying,  
“Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name.”

And he said unto them,  
“I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven. Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy; and nothing shall by any means hurt you. Notwithstanding, in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven.”

In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said,  
“I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

hast revealed them unto babes: even so, Father; for so it seemed good in thy sight. All things are delivered unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Son is, but the Father; and who the Father is, but the Son, and he to whom the Son will reveal him."

And he turned unto his disciples, and said privately, "Blessed are the eyes that see the things which ye see: for I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them."

*What shall I do to inherit eternal life?*

And, behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying,

"Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?"

He said unto him,

"What is written in the law? how readest thou?"

And he answering said,

"Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself."

And he said unto him,

"Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live."

But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus,

"And who is my neighbour?"

And Jesus answering said,

"A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leaving him half dead. And by chance there came down a certain priest that way; and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side. And

## CHRIST FOUND HIS NEW SOCIETY

likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side. But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was; and when he saw him, he had compassion on him, and went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. And on the morrow when he departed, he took out two pence; and gave them to the host, and said unto him, 'Take care of him: and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again I will repay thee.'

"Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him that fell among the thieves?"

And he said,

"He that shewed mercy upon him."

Then said Jesus unto him,

"Go thou and do likewise."

*Lord, teach us to listen; teach us to pray*

And it came to pass, as they went, that he entered into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha received him into her house. And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at Jesus' feet, and heard his word. But Martha was cumbered about much serving, and came to him, and said,

"Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me."

And Jesus answered and said unto her,

"Martha, Martha, thou art careful and troubled about many things, but one thing is needful; and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her."

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

And it came to pass, that, as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him,

“Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples.”

And he said unto them,

“When ye pray, say, Our Father which art in heaven, hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so in earth. Give us day by day our daily bread. And forgive us our sins; for we also forgive everyone that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation; but deliver us from evil.”

And he said unto them,

“Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him, ‘Friend, lend me three loaves; for a friend of mine in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him?’ And he from within shall answer and say, ‘Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee.’ I say unto you, though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.

“And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given unto you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. For everyone that asketh, receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if he ask a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent? or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children; how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?”

*Master, we would see a sign from thee*

And when the people were gathered thick together, certain of the scribes and Pharisees said unto him,

“Master, we would see a sign from thee.”

And he answered and said unto them,

“An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonah: for as Jonah was three days and three nights in the whale’s belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. The men of Nineveh shall rise up in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and, behold, a greater than Jonah is here. The queen of the south shall rise up in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than Solomon is here.”

And as he spake, a certain Pharisee besought him to dine with him: and he went in, and sat down to meat. And when the Pharisee saw it, he marvelled that he had not first washed before dinner.

And the Lord said unto him,

“Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and platter; but your inward part is full of ravening and wickedness. Ye fools, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within also? But rather give alms of such things as ye have; and, behold, all things are clean unto you. But woe unto you, Pharisees! for ye tithe mint and rue and all manner of herbs, and pass over judgment and the love of God: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. Woe unto you,

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

Pharisees! for ye love the uppermost seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets. Woe unto you, scribes, Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are as graves which appear not, and the men that walk over them are not aware of them."

*Master, thou reproachest us also*

Then answered one of the lawyers, and said unto him, "Master, thus saying thou reproachest us also."

And he said,

"Woe unto you also, ye lawyers! for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers. Woe unto you! for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers killed them. Truly ye bear witness that ye allow the deeds of your fathers: for they indeed killed them, and ye build their sepulchres. Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send them prophets and apostles, and some of them they shall slay and persecute: that the blood of all prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation; from the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zachariah; which perished between the altar and the temple. Verily I say unto you, It shall be required of this generation. Woe unto you, lawyers! for ye have taken away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered."

And as he said these things unto them, the scribes and the Pharisees began to urge him vehemently, and to provoke him to speak of many things: laying wait for him, and seeking to catch something out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.

*Beware of covetousness*

And one of the company said unto him,

“Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me.”

And he said unto him,

“Man, who made me a judge or a divider over you?”

And he said unto them,

“Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man’s life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.”

And he spake a parable unto them, saying,

“The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully; and he thought within himself, saying, ‘What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits?’ And he said, ‘This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater: and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods. And I will say to my soul, “Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry.”’ But God said unto him, ‘Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided?’ So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.”

And he said unto his disciples,

“Therefore I say unto you, take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat; neither for the body, what ye shall put on. The life is more than meat, and the body is more than raiment. Consider the ravens: for they neither sow nor reap; which neither have storehouse nor barn; and God feedeth them: how much more are ye better than the fowls? And which of you by taking thought can add to

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

his stature one cubit? If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why take ye thought for the rest? Consider the lilies how they grow: they toil not, they spin not; and yet I say unto you, that Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. If then God so clothe the grass, which is to-day in the field, and to-morrow is cast into the oven; how much more will he clothe you, O ye of little faith! And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind. For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things.

### *Seek first the Kingdom of God*

“But rather seek ye the kingdom of God: and all these things shall be added unto you. Fear not, little flock, for it is your Father’s good pleasure to give you the kingdom. Sell that ye have, and give alms; provide yourselves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth. For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. Let your loins be girded about, and your lights burning; and ye yourselves like unto men that wait for their Lord, when he will return from the wedding, that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately. Blessed are those servants, whom the Lord when he cometh shall find watching: Verily, I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them. And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find them so, blessed are those servants. And this know, that if the goodman of the house had known what hour the thief

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken through. Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not."

### *The faithful and wise steward*

Then Peter said unto him,

"Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all?"

And the Lord said,

"Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom his Lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season? Blessed is that servant, whom his lord, when he cometh, shall find so doing. Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath. But and if that servant say in his heart, 'My lord delayeth his coming,' and shall begin to beat the menservants and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken; the lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers. And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required; and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

"I am come to send fire on the earth; and what will I, if it be already kindled? But I have a baptism to be baptized

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished! Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division: for from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three. The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father; the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother; the mother-in-law against her daughter-in-law, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law."

And he said also to the people,

"When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, 'There cometh a shower,' and so it is. And when ye see the south wind blow, ye say, 'There will be heat;' and it cometh to pass. Ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky and of the earth; but how is it ye do not discern this time? Yea, and why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right?

"When thou goest with thine adversary to the magistrate, as thou art in the way, give diligence that thou mayest be delivered from him: lest he hale thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer cast thee into prison. I tell thee, thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast paid the very last mite."

*He went throughout the villages teaching*

There were present at that season some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. And Jesus answering said unto them,

"Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such things? I tell you, Nay: but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish. Or

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

those eighteen, upon whom the tower of Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem? I tell you, Nay: but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish."

He spoke also this parable,

"A certain man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard; and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none. Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, 'Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig tree, and find none: cut it down; why cumbereth it the ground?' And he answering said unto him, 'Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it: and if it bear fruit, well: and if not, then after that thou shalt cut it down.' "

And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath. And, behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up herself. And when Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said unto her,

"Woman, thou are loosed from thine infirmity."

And he laid his hands on her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God. And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath day, and said unto the people,

"There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath day."

The Lord then answered him, and said,

"Thou hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the stall, and lead him

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

away to watering? And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day?"

And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed, and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

Then said he,

"Unto what is the kingdom of God like? And whereunto shall I resemble it? It is like a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and cast into his garden; and it grew, and waxed a great tree; and fowls of the air lodged in the branches of it."

And again he said,

"Whereunto shall I liken the kingdom of God? It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in threc measures of meal, till the whole was leavened."

*And journeying toward Jerusalem*

And he went through the cities and villages, teaching, and journeying toward Jerusalem.

Then said one unto him,

"Lord, are there few that be saved?"

And he said unto them,

"Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able. When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, 'Lord, Lord, open unto us;' and he shall answer and say unto you, 'I know ye not whence ye are.'

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

Then shall ye begin to say, 'We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets.' But he shall say, 'I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity.' There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out. And they shall come from the east, and from the west, and from the north, and from the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God. And, behold, there are last which shall be first; and there are first which shall be last."

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber. But he that entereth in by the door, is the shepherd of the sheep. To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out. And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice. And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him; for they know not the voice of strangers."

Then said Jesus unto them again,

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep. All that ever came before me are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them. I am the door: by me if any man enter in he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture. The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly. I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep. But he that is an hireling, and not the shep-

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

herd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep and fleeth; and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep. The hireling fleeth because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep. I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine. As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep. And other sheep I have which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd. Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it again. No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father.”

### *The feast of the Dedication of the temple at Jerusalem*

And it was at Jerusalem the feast of the dedication, and it was winter. And Jesus walked in the Temple in Solomon's porch. Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him,

“How long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly.”

Jesus answered them,

“I have told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me. But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you. My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: and I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand. My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all:

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand.  
I and my Father are one."

Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him.

Jesus answered them,

"Many good works have I showed you from my Father;  
for which of those works do ye stone me?"

The Jews answered him saying,

"For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy;  
and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God."

Jesus answered them,

"Is it not written in your law, 'I said, Ye are gods'? If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the Scripture cannot be broken: say ye of him whom the Father hath sanctified and sent into the world, 'Thou blasphemest,' because I said 'I am the Son of God'? If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works; that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in me, and I in him."

Therefore they sought again to take him, but he escaped out of their hand.

### *Jesus crosses the Jordan into Herod's territory*

And he went away again beyond Jordan into the places where John at first baptized; and there he abode. And many resorted unto him, and said,

"John did no miracle; but all things that John spake of this man were true." And many believed on him there.

The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, saying unto him,

"Get thee out, and depart hence; for Herod will kill thee."

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

And he said unto them,

“Go ye and tell that fox, ‘Behold, I cast out devils, and I do cures to-day and to-morrow, and the third day I shall be perfected.’ Nevertheless I must walk to-day, and to-morrow, and the day following: for it cannot be that a prophet will perish out of Jerusalem.

“O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee; how often would I have gathered thy children together as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. And verily I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until the time come when ye shall say, ‘Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.’ ”

THE WINTER OF A.D. 29-30  
AND THE FINAL JOURNEY TO JERUSALEM  
FOR THE SPRING FEAST OF PASSOVER



AND it came to pass, as he went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees to eat bread on the sabbath day, that they watched him. And, behold, there was a certain man before him which had the dropsy. And Jesus answering spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying,

“Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath day?” And they held their peace.

And he took him, and healed him, and let him go; and answered them saying,

“Which of you shall have an ass or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the sabbath day?”

And they could not answer him again to these things.

*The Pharisees, and the parable of the supper*

And he put forth a parable to those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief rooms; saying unto them,

“When thou art bidden of any man to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room, lest a more honourable man than thou be bidden of him; and he that bade thee and him come and say to thee, ‘Give this man place;’ and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room. But

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room; that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee, ‘Friend, go up higher:’ then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee. For whoso exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.”

Then said he also to him that bade him,

“When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor thy rich neighbours; lest they also bid thee again, and a recompence be made thee. But when thou makest a feast, call the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind: and then thou shalt be blessed; for they cannot recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just.”

And when one of them that sat at meat with him heard these things, he said unto him,

“Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God.”

Then said he unto him,

“A certain man made a great supper, and bade many; and sent his servant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, ‘Come; for all things are now ready.’ And they all with one consent began to make excuse. The first said unto him, ‘I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go and see it: I pray thee have me excused.’ And another said, ‘I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excused.’ And another said, ‘I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come.’ So that servant came and showed his lord those things. Then the master of the house being angry said to his servant, ‘Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city;

and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind.' And the servant said, 'Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room.' And the Lord said unto the servant, 'Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel them to come in, that my house may be filled. For I say unto you, that none of those men which were bidden shall taste of my supper.'"

And there went great multitudes with him: and he turned, and said unto them,

"If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple. For which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have sufficient to finish it? Lest haply, after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that behold it begin to mock him, saying, 'This man began to build, and was not able to finish.' Or what king, going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand? Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassador, and desireth conditions of peace. So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple. Salt is good: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned? It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghill; but men cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear."

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

### *The Publicans, and the parable of the prodigal son*

Then drew near unto him all the publicans and sinners for to hear him. And the Pharisees and scribes murmured, saying,

“This man receiveth sinners and eateth with them.”

And he spake this parable unto them, saying,

“What man of you, having a hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness and go after that which is lost, until he find it? And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing. And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying unto them, ‘Rejoice with me; for I have found my sheep which was lost.’ I say unto you that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.

“Either what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find it? And when she hath found it, she calleth her friends and her neighbours together, saying, ‘Rejoice with me; for I have found the piece which I had lost.’ Likewise, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.”

And he said,

“A certain man had two sons: and the younger of them said to his father, ‘Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me.’ And he divided unto him his living. And not many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

substance in riotous living. And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want. And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into the fields to feed swine. And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him.

“And when he came to himself, he said, ‘How many hired servants of my father’s have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, and am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants.’ And he arose, and came to his father. And when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran and fell on his neck and kissed him. And the son said unto him, ‘Father, I have sinned against heaven and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son.’ But the father said to his servants, ‘Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet: and bring hither the fatted calf and kill it; and let us eat, and be merry: for this my son was dead and is alive again; he was lost, and is found.’ And they began to be merry.

“Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing. And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant. And he said unto him, ‘Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound.’ And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, and entreated him. And he answering said to his father, ‘Lo, these many years

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment; and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends. But as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf.' And he said unto him, 'Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine. It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad, for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.' "

### *The disciples, and the parables of stewardship*

And he said unto his disciples,

"There was a certain rich man, which had a steward: and the same was accused unto him that he had wasted his goods. And he called him, and said unto him, 'How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy stewardship: for thou mayest be no longer steward.' Then that steward said within himself, 'What shall I do? for my lord taketh away from me the stewardship: I cannot dig; to beg I am ashamed. I am resolved what to do, that, when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses.' So he called every one of his lord's debtors unto him, and said unto the first, 'How much owest thou unto my lord?' And he said, 'A hundred measures of oil.' And he said unto him, 'Take thy bill, and sit down quickly, and write fifty.' Then said he to another, 'And how much owest thou?' And he said, 'A hundred measures of wheat.' And he said unto him, 'Take thy bill, and write four score.' And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiser than the children of light.

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

“And I say unto you,

“Make to yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness; that when ye fail they may receive you into everlasting habitations. He that is faithful in that which is least is faithful also in much. If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches? And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another man’s, who shall give you that which is your own? No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.”

And the Pharisees also, who were covetous, heard all these things: and they derided him.

And he said unto them,

“There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day: and there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores, and desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man’s table: moreover, the dogs came and licked his sores. And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham’s bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried; and in hell he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried and said, ‘Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.’ But Abraham said, ‘Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivest thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things, but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence.' Then he said, 'I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house, for I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come to this place of torment.' Abraham saith unto him, 'They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them.' And he said, 'Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent.' And he said unto him, 'If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.' "

Then said he unto the disciples,

"Which of you, having a servant ploughing or feeding cattle, will say unto him by and by, when he is come from the field, 'Go and sit down to meat.' And will not rather say unto him, 'Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken; and afterward thou shalt eat and drink?' Doth he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded him? I trow not. So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, 'We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.' "

*He cleanses the lepers, and teaches the people*

And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. And as he entered into a certain village, there met him ten men which were lepers, which stood afar off: and they lifted up their voices, and said,

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

“Jesus, Master, have mercy on us.”

And when he saw them, he said unto them,

“Go, show yourselves unto the priests.”

And it came to pass, that as they went, they were cleansed. And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God, and fell down on his face at his feet, giving thanks. And he was a Samaritan.

And Jesus answering, said,

“Were there not ten cleansed? but where are the nine? There are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger.” And he said unto him, “Arise, go thy way: thy faith hath made thee whole.”

And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered and said,

“The kingdom of God cometh not with observation. Neither shall they say, ‘Lo, here!’ or ‘Lo, there!’ for behold, the kingdom of God is within you.”

And he spake a parable unto them to this end, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint; saying,

“There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man: and there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, saying, ‘Avenge me of mine adversary.’ And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, ‘Though I fear not God, nor regard man, yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continued coming she weary me.’ ”

And the Lord said,

“Hear what the unjust judge saith. And shall not God avenge his own elect which cry day and night unto him,

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

though he bear long with them? I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless, when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?"

And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others:

"Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican. The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, 'God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess.' And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes to heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, 'God be merciful to me a sinner.' I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted."

*He speaks of marriage, and blesses the children*

And the Pharisees came unto him, tempting him, and saying,

"Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?"

And he answered and said unto them,

"What did Moses command you?"

And they said,

"Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away."

And Jesus answered and said unto them,

"Moses because of the hardness of your hearts wrote you this precept, and suffered you to put away your wives: but

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

from the beginning it was not so. Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning, made them male and female, and said, 'For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh'? Wherefore they are no more twain but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together let not man put asunder."

And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same matter. And he saith unto them,

"Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery against her: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery. And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery."

His disciples say unto him,

"If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry."

But he said unto them,

"All men cannot receive this saying, save they to whom it is given. For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from their mother's womb; and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men; and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it."

Then were brought unto him young children and infants, that he should put his hands on them, and pray: and his disciples rebuked those that brought them. But when Jesus saw it, he was much displeased, and said unto them,

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

“Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not; for of such is the kingdom of God. Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein.”

And he took them up in his arms, and put his hands on them, and blessed them.

### *The rich young ruler, and the vineyard labourers*

And when he was gone forth into the way, behold, a certain ruler came running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, saying,

“Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?”

And Jesus said unto him,

“Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is, God. But if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments.”

He saith unto him,

“Which?”

Jesus said,

“Thou knowest the commandments. ‘Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honour thy father and thy mother:’ and, ‘Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.’”

The young man saith unto him,

“Master, all these have I kept from my youth up: what lack I yet?”

And Jesus beholding him loved him, and said unto him,

“One thing thou lackest: if thou wilt be perfect, go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, take up thy cross, and follow me.”

But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful, for he had great possessions.

And when Jesus saw that he went away sorrowful, he saith unto his disciples,

“How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!”

And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them,

“Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God! It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.”

And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves,

“Who then can be saved?”

And Jesus, looking upon them, saith,

“With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.”

Then Peter began to say unto him,

“Lo, we have left all, and followed thee; what shall we have therefore?”

And Jesus said unto them,

“Verily I say unto you, that ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

“Verily I say unto you, there is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife,

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

or children, or lands, for my sake and the gospel's, but he shall receive a hundredfold in this present time, houses and brethren and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life. But many that are first shall be last; and the last first.

"For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a householder, which went out early in the morning to hirc labourers into his vineyard. And when he had agreed with the labourers for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard. And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the market place, and said unto them, 'Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right I will give you.' And they went their way. Again he went out about the sixth hour and ninth hour, and did likewise. And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, 'Why stand ye here all day idle?' They say unto him, 'Because no man hath hired us.' He saith unto them, 'Go ye into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, that shall ye receive.' So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, 'Call the labourers, and give them their hire, beginning from the last unto the first.' And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny. But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more; and they likewise received every man a penny. And when they had received it, they murmured against the goodman of the house, saying, 'These last have wrought but one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day.' But he answered one of them, and said, 'Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for one penny?

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

Take that thine is, and go thy way. I will give unto this last, even as unto thee. Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? Is thine eye evil, because I am good? So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many are called, but few chosen."

### *Let us go again into Judæa*

Now a certain man was sick, named Lazarus, of Bethany, the town of Mary and her sister Martha. It was that Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick. Therefore his sisters sent unto him, saying,

"Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick."

When Jesus heard that, he said,

"This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby."

Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus. When he had heard therefore that he was sick, he abode two days still in the same place where he was. Then after that saith he to his disciples,

"Let us go into Judæa again."

His disciples say unto him,

"Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee; and goest thou thither again?"

Jesus answered,

"Are there not twelve hours in the day? If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of the world. But if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him."

These things said he: and after that he saith unto them,

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

“Our friend Lazarus sleepeth; but I go, that I may awake him out of sleep.”

Then said his disciples,

“Lord, if he sleep, he shall do well.”

Howbeit Jesus spoke of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of taking rest in sleep. Then said Jesus unto them plainly,

“Lazarus is dead. And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, to the intent that ye may believe; nevertheless let us go unto him.”

Then said Thomas, which is called Didymus, unto his fellow disciples,

“Let us also go, that we may die with him.”

Then when Jesus came, he found that he had lain in the grave four days already. Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off; and many of the Jews came to Martha and Mary to comfort them concerning their brother. Then Martha, as soon as she heard that Jesus was coming, went and met him. But Mary sat still in the house.

### *I am the resurrection and the life*

Then said Martha unto Jesus,

“Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. But I know, that even now, whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give it thee.”

Jesus saith unto her,

“Thy brother shall rise again.”

Martha saith unto him,

“I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day.”

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

Jesus said unto her,

“I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live; and whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this?”

She saith unto him,

“Yea, Lord: I believe that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world.”

And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary, her sister, secretly, saying,

“The Master is come, and calleth for thee.”

As soon as she heard that, she arose quickly, and came unto him. Now Jesus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place where Martha met him. The Jews then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary, that she arose up hastily and went out, followed her, saying,

“She goeth unto the grave to weep there.”

Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying unto him,

“Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.”

When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in spirit, and was troubled, and said,

“Where have ye laid him?”

They say unto him,

“Lord, come and see.”

Jesus wept.

Then said the Jews,

“Behold, how he loved him!”

And some of them said,

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

“Could not this man, which opened the eyes of the blind, have caused that even this man should not have died?”

Jesus therefore again groaning in himself cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it.

Jesus said,

“Take ye away the stone.”

Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, “Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been dead four days.”

Jesus said unto her,

“Said I not unto thee, that, if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God?”

Then they took away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said,

“Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me. And I know that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by I said it, that they may believe that thou hast sent me.”

And when he had thus spoken, he cried with a loud voice,

“Lazarus, come forth.”

And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with graveclothes; and his face was bound about with a napkin.

Jesus saith unto them,

“Loose him, and let him go.”

Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, believed on him. But some of them went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done.

*The Jews' passover was nigh at hand*

Then gathered the chief priests and Pharisees a council, and said,

“What shall we do? for this man doeth many miracles. If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him; and the Romans shall come and take away both our place and nation.”

And one of them named Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them,

“Ye know nothing at all, nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.”

And thus spake he not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation; and not for that nation only, but also that he should gather together in one the children of God that were scattered abroad.

Then from that day forth they took counsel together for to put him to death.

Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews; but went thence into a country near to the wilderness, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples. And the Jews' passover was nigh at hand: and many went out of the country up to Jerusalem before the passover, to purify themselves. Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple,

“What think ye, that he will not come to the feast?”

Now both the chief priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that, if any man should know where he were, he should shew it, that they might take him.

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

*Behold, we go up to Jerusalem*

Then Jesus took the twelve apart, and began to tell them what things should happen unto him; for they were in the way going up to Jerusalem, and Jesus went before them: and they were amazed; and as they followed they were afraid. And he said unto them,

“Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Son of man shall be accomplished. For he shall be betrayed unto the chief priests and unto the scribes; and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify him. And they shall mock him, and shall scourge him, and shall spit upon him, and shall kill him, and the third day he shall rise again.”

And they understood none of these things: and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.

Then came to him the mother of Zebedee’s children, with her sons, worshipping him, and desiring a certain thing of him. And he said unto her,

“What wilt thou?”

She saith unto him,

“Grant that these my two sons may sit one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left in thy kingdom.”

But Jesus answered and said unto James and John,

“Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink the cup that I shall drink of, and be baptized with the baptism that I shall be baptized with?”

And they say unto him,

“We are able.”

And Jesus said unto them,

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

“Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with; but to sit on my right hand, and on my left is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared of my Father.”

And when the ten heard it they were moved with indignation against the two brethren. But Jesus called them unto him and said,

“Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and their great ones exercise authority upon them. But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever shall be great among you, let him be your minister; and whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant: even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.”

*Jesus went before, ascending up to Jerusalem*

And it came to pass, that as he was come nigh to Jericho, blind Bartimeus, the son of Timeus, sat by the wayside begging. And hearing the multitude pass by, he asked what it meant. And they told him that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by. And he began to cry out, and say,

“Jesus, thou Son of David, have mercy on me.”

And many charged him that he should hold his peace: but he cried so much the more,

“Thou Son of David, have mercy on me.”

And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be brought unto him. And they call the blind man, saying unto him,

“Be of good comfort, rise; he calleth for thee.”

And he, casting away his garment, rose and came to Jesus. And Jesus answered and said unto him,

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

“What wilt thou that I shall do unto thee?”  
The blind man said unto him,  
“Lord, that I may receive my sight.”  
And Jesus said unto him,  
“Go thy way, and receive thy sight; thy faith hath made  
thee whole.”

And immediately he received his sight, and followed Jesus in the way, glorifying God; and all the people, when they saw it, gave praise to God.

And Jesus entered and passed through Jericho. And, behold, there was a man named Zaccheus, which was the chief among the publicans, and he was rich. And he sought to see Jesus who he was; and could not for the press, because he was little of stature. And he ran before, and climbed up into a sycamore tree to see him; for he was to pass that way. And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up, and saw him, and said unto him,

“Zaccheus, make haste and come down; for to-day I must abide at thy house.”

And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully. And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying that he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner.

And Zaccheus stood and said unto the Lord,

“Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have taken anything from any man by false accusation, I restore him fourfold.”

And Jesus said unto him,

“This day is salvation come to this house, forasmuch as he also is a son of Abraham. For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.”

## CHRIST FOUNDS HIS NEW SOCIETY

And as they heard these things, he added and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought the kingdom of God should immediately appear. He said therefore,

“A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, ‘Occupy till I come.’ But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, ‘We will not have this man to reign over us.’ And it came to pass that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading. Then came the first, saying, ‘Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds.’ And he said unto him, ‘Well, thou good servant: because thou hast been faithful in very little, have thou authority over ten cities.’ And the second came, saying, ‘Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds.’ And he said likewise to him, ‘Be thou also over five cities.’ And another came, saying, ‘Lord, behold, here is thy pound, which I have kept laid up in a napkin: for I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up that thou layedst not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow.’ And he saith unto him, ‘Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked servant. Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow: wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury?’ And he said unto them that stood by, ‘Take from him the pound, and give it to him that hath ten pounds.’ (And they

## ON THIS ROCK WILL I BUILD MY CHURCH

say unto him, 'Lord, he hath ten pounds'). 'For I say unto you, that unto every one that hath shall be given; and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him. But those mine enemies which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.' "

And when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending up to Jerusalem.

# THE CLASH WITH THE OLD REGIME

V.

*Behold, thy King cometh unto thee*

Regioce greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of  
Jerusalem: behold thy King coming unto thee: he is just, and  
having salvation: lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a  
colt the foal of an ass. . . . Awake, O sword, against my  
shepherd, and against the man that is my fellow, saith the Lord  
of hosts: smite the shepherd, and the sheep will be scattered. . . .  
So they weighed for my price thirty pieces of silver. . . . They  
shall look upon me whom they have pierced. . . . And one  
shall say, What are these wounds in thine hands? Then he  
shall answer, Those with which I was wounded in the house  
of my friends.

The Prophecy of Zechariah

Chapters 9-13, 486 B.C.

THE WEEK OF THE PASSION  
HE CAME UNTO HIS OWN  
AND HIS OWN RECEIVED HIM NOT



THEN Jesus, six days before the passover, came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead. There they made him a supper in the house of Simon the leper, and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him. Then took Mary a pound of ointment of spikenard, very costly; and she brake the alabaster box, and poured it on his head as he sat at meat; and she anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment. And there were some that had indignation within themselves.

Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, which should betray him,

"To what purpose is this waste? Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?" This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein.

And they murmured against her.

Then said Jesus,

"Let her alone. Why trouble ye her? She hath wrought a good work on me. For the poor ye have always with you, and whensoever ye will ye may do them good; but

## THE CLASH WITH THE OLD REGIME

me ye have not always. She hath done what she could: she is come aforehand to anoint my body to the burying. Verily, I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world, this also that she hath done shall be spoken of for a memorial of her."

Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: and they came not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead. But the chief priests consulted that they might put Lazarus also to death, because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

### SUNDAY: THE FIRST DAY OF THE WEEK

And it came to pass the next day, when he was come nigh to Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount called the Mount of Olives, he sent two of his disciples saying,

"Go ye into the village over against you; and as soon as ye be entered into it ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her whereon yet never man sat: loose them and bring them unto me. And if any man ask you, 'Why do ye loose them?' ye shall say, 'The Lord hath need of them;' and straightway he will send them."

All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet saying, "Tell ye the daughter of Zion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass."

And the disciples went and did as Jesus commanded them. And they found the colt tied by the door without, in a place where two ways met. And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof said unto them,

## BEHOLD, THY KING COMETH UNTO THEE

“Why do ye loose the colt?” And they said unto them even as Jesus had commanded: and they let them go.

And they brought the ass, and the colt; and they cast their garments upon the colt, and they set Jesus thereon. And much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem, took branches of palm trees, and went forth to meet him. And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way; others cut down branches from the trees, and strewed them in the way. And when he was come nigh, even now at the descent of the Mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice for all the mighty works that they had seen.

And the multitude that went before and that followed, cried, saying:

“Hosanna to the Son of David: Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord. Hosanna in the highest.”

“Hosanna; Blessed be the kingdom of our father David, that cometh in the name of the Lord: Hosanna in the highest.”

“Hosanna: Blessed be the king that cometh in the name of the Lord: peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.”

And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said unto him,

“Master, rebuke thy disciples.”

And he answered and said unto them,

“I tell you that, if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out.”

And when he was come near, he beheld the city: and wept over it, saying,

“If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day,

## THE CLASH WITH THE OLD REGIME

the things which belong unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes. For the days shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side, and shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee; and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another; because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation."

And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying,

"Who is this?"

And the multitude said,

"This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee."

And Jesus entered into the temple; and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the eventide was come, he went out unto Bethany with the twelve.

These things understood not his disciples at the first, but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things unto him. The people therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record. For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

The Pharisees therefore said among themselves,

"Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? behold, the world is gone after him."

## MONDAY: THE SECOND DAY OF THE WEEK

And on the morrow, as he returned into the city from Bethany, he was hungry: and seeing a fig tree afar off

BEHOLD, THY KING COMETH UNTO THEE

having leaves, he came, if haply he might find anything thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves: for the time of figs was not yet.

And Jesus answered and said unto it,  
"No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever."

And his disciples heard it.

And they came to Jerusalem, and Jesus went into the temple of God and found there those that sold oxen and sheep and doves, and the changers of money sitting: and when he had made a scourge of small cords he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep and the oxen; and poured out the changers' money, and overthrew the tables, and the seats of them that sold doves; and would not suffer that any man should carry any vessel through the temple.

And he said unto him that sold doves,

"Take these things hence; make not my Father's house a house of merchandise. Is it not written, 'My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but ye have made it a den of thieves.'" And his disciples remembered that it was written, "The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up."

But the chief priests and scribes heard it, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, because all the people was astonished at his doctrine. And he taught daily in the temple. And the blind and the lame came to him, and he healed them.

And when the chief priests and scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, "Hosanna to the Son of David;" they were sore displeased, and said unto him,

"Hearest thou what these say?"

And Jesus said unto them,

## THE CLASH WITH THE OLD REGIME

“Yea; have ye never read, ‘Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?’”

Then answered the Jews and said unto him,  
“What sign shovest thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these things?”

And Jesus answered and said unto them,  
“Destroy this temple and in three days I will raise it up.”  
Then said the Jews,  
“Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days?”

But he spake of the temple of his body. When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this unto them; and they believed the Scripture, and the word that Jesus had said.

And when even was come, he left them, and went out of the city into Bethany; and he lodged there.

### TUESDAY: THE THIRD DAY OF THE WEEK

And in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig tree dried up from the roots. And Peter calling to remembrance saith unto him,

“Master, behold, the fig tree which thou cursest is withered away.”

And Jesus answering saith unto them,  
“Have faith in God. For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, ‘Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea;’ and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith

## BEHOLD, THY KING COMETH UNTO THEE

shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith. Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them. And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have aught against any; that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.”

*By what authority doest thou these things?*

And they come again to Jerusalem: and as he taught the people in the temple and preached the gospel, the chief priests and scribes came upon him with the elders, and spake unto him, saying,

“By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority to do these things?”

And Jesus answered and said unto them,

“I also will ask of you one question, which if ye will tell me, I in like wise will tell you by what authority I do these things. The baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of man? answer me.”

And they reasoned with themselves, saying, “If we shall say, ‘From heaven,’ he will say, ‘Why then did ye not believe him?’ But if we shall say, ‘Of men,’ the people will stone us. For they feared the people: for all men counted John, that he was a prophet indeed.

And they answered and said unto Jesus,

“We cannot tell.”

And he said unto them,

“Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.”

## THE CLASH WITH THE OLD REGIME

“But what think ye? A certain man had two sons; and he came to the first, and said, ‘Son, go work to-day in my vineyard,’ He answered and said, ‘I will not,’ but afterward he repented, and went. And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, ‘I go, sir,’ and he went not. Whether of them twain did the will of his father?”

They say unto him,  
“The first.”

Jesus saith unto them,

“Verily I say unto you, the publicans and harlots go into the kingdom of God before you. For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not; but the publicans and harlots believed him: and ye, when ye had seen it, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.”

“Hear another parable: A certain man planted a vineyard, and set a hedge about it, and digged a place for the winevat, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country for a long time. And at the season he sent a servant to the husbandmen, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard: but the husbandmen beat him, and sent him away empty. And again he sent unto them another servant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully handled. And again, he sent a third; and him they killed, and many others; beating some, and killing some. Then said the lord of the vineyard, ‘What shall I do? I will send my beloved son: it may be they will reverence him when they see him.’ But when the husbandmen saw

## BEHOLD, THY KING COMETH UNTO THEE

him, they reasoned among themselves, saying, 'This is the heir: come, let us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.' So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What therefore shall the lord of the vineyard do unto them? He shall come and destroy these husbandmen, and shall give the vineyard to others which shall render him the fruits in their seasons."

And when they heard it, they said,  
"God forbid."

And he beheld them, and said,  
"What is this that is written, 'The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes.' Whosoever shall fall upon that stone shall be broken; but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder. Therefore I say unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof."

And the chief priests and scribes the same hour sought to lay hands on him; and they feared the people because they took him for a prophet: for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them. And they watched him, and sent forth spies which should feign themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governor.

And Jesus answered and spake unto them again by parables, and said,

"The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son, and sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and

## THE CLASH WITH THE OLD REGIME

they would not come. Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, 'Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage.' But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise: and the remnant took his servants and entreated them spitefully, and slew them. But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city. Then saith he to his servants, 'The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy. Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage.' So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests. And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment: and he saith unto him, 'Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment?' And he was speechless. Then said the king to the servants, 'Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.' For many are called, but few are chosen."

Then the Pharisees left him and went their way, and took counsel how they might entangle him in his talk.

*No man after that durst ask him any question*

And the Pharisees sent unto him their disciples with the Herodians, to catch him in his words. And when they were come, they say unto him,

## BEHOLD, THY KING COMETH UNTO THEE

“Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, neither carest thou for any man: for thou regardest not the person of men. Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give tribute to Cæsar, or not? Shall we give, or shall we not give?”

But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said,

“Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites? Show me the tribute money.” And they brought him a penny.

And he saith unto them,

“Whose is this image and superscription?”

They say unto him,

“Cæsar’s.”

Then saith he unto them,

“Render therefore unto Cæsar the things which are Cæsar’s; and unto God the things which are God’s.”

And they could not take hold of his words before the people: and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace, and left him, and went their way.

Then came to him certain of the Sadducees, which deny that there is any resurrection; and they asked him, saying,

“Master, Moses wrote unto us, ‘If any man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.’ There were therefore seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and died without children. And the second took her to wife, and he died childless. And the third took her; and in like manner the seven also: and they left no children, and died. Last of all the woman died also. Therefore in the resurrection whose wife of them is she? for seven had her to wife?”

And Jesus answering said unto them,

## THE CLASH WITH THE OLD REGIME

“Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God. The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage; but they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage; neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the angels of God in heaven; and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection. And as touching the dead, that they rise; have ye not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush God spake unto him, saying, ‘I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?’ He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living: for all live unto him. Ye therefore do greatly err.”

And when the multitude heard this, they were astonished at his doctrine.

But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together. Then one of them which was a lawyer, having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him a question, saying,

“Master, which is the great commandment in the law?”

Jesus said unto him,

“The first of all the commandments is, ‘Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God is one Lord: and thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength.’ This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, namely, this, ‘Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.’ There is none other commandment greater than

BEHOLD, THY KING COMETH UNTO THEE

these. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.”

And the lawyer said unto him,

“Well, Master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God: and there is none other but he: and to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love his neighbour as himself, is more than all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices.”

And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him,

“Thou art not far from the kingdom of God.”

And while the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them, saying,

“What think ye of Christ? whose son is he?”

They say unto him,

“The Son of David.”

He saith unto them,

“How then doth David in spirit call him Lord. For David himself saith in the book of Psalms, ‘The Lord said unto my Lord, ‘Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool?’’ If David then call him Lord, how is he his son?”

And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any man from that day forth ask him any more questions. And the common people heard him gladly.

*Behold, your house is left unto you desolate*

Then in the audience of all the people he said unto his disciples,

## THE CLASH WITH THE OLD REGIME

“Beware of the scribes, which desire to walk in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief rooms at feasts; which devour widows' houses, and for a show make long prayers: the same shall receive greater damnation.”

And he looked up, and saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasury, and many that were rich cast in much. And he saw also a certain poor widow casting in thither two mites which make a farthing. And he said,

“Of a truth, I say unto you, that this poor widow hath cast in more than they all: for all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God: but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had.”

Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples, saying,

“The scribes and Pharisees sit in Moses' seat; all therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not after their works, for they say, and do not. For they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay them on men's shoulders; but they themselves will not move them with one of their fingers. But all their works they do for to be seen of men; they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments, and love to be called of men, 'Rabbi, Rabbi.' But be not ye called 'Rabbi:' for one is your Master, even Christ; and all ye are brethren. And call no man your father upon earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters; for one is your Master, even Christ. But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant. And whosoever shall

BEHOLD, THY KING COMETH UNTO THEE

exalt himself shall be abased; and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted.

“But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves.

“Woe unto you, ye blind guides, which say, ‘Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor!’ Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold? And, ‘Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty.’ Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift? Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon. And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein. And he that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.

“Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done and not to leave the other undone. Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel.

“Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess. Thou blind

## THE CLASH WITH THE OLD REGIME

Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.

“Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whitened sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men’s bones, and of all uncleanness. Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.

“Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous, and say, ‘If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.’ Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves: that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets. Fill up then the measure of your fathers. Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell? Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets and wise men, and scribes: and some of them ye shall kill and crucify; and some of them ye shall scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them from city to city: that upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zachariah, son of Barachiah, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar. Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation.

“O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall

BEHOLD, THY KING COMETH UNTO THEE

say, 'Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.' ”

And Jesus departed from the temple. And as he went out, some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones and gifts; and one of his disciples said unto him,

“Master, see what manner of stones, and what buildings are here!”

And Jesus answering said unto him,

“Seest thou these great buildings? Behold, the days come in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.”

*When shall these things be?*

And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, over against the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew came to him privately, saying,

“Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?”

And Jesus answered and said unto them,

“Take heed that no man deceive you: For many shall come in my name, saying, 'I am Christ;' and shall deceive many: go ye not therefore after them. And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must first come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. All these things are the beginning of sorrows. But take heed to yourselves: for before all these, they shall lay hands on you, and perse-

## THE CLASH WITH THE OLD REGIME

cute you: for they shall deliver you up to councils, and to prisons; and in the synagogues ye shall be beaten: and ye shall be brought before kings and rulers for my sake, for a testimony against them. But when they shall lead you, and deliver you up, take no thought beforehand what ye shall speak, neither do ye premeditate. But whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Ghost. For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist. And ye shall be betrayed, both by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolk, and friends; and children shall rise up against their parents, and shall cause them to be put to death. And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. And ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake. But he that shall endure unto the end the same shall be saved. And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations, and then shall the end come.

“And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed about with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place (whoso readeth let him understand), then let them which are in Judæa flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it, depart out, and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto. Let him that is on the housetop not go down into the house, neither enter therein to take anything out of his house. And let him that is in the field not turn back again, for to take up his garment. But woe to them that are with child, and to them

## BEHOLD, THY KING COMETH UNTO THEE

that give suck in those days! And pray that your flight be not in winter, neither on the sabbath day: for there shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days should be shortened there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened. Then if any man shall say unto you, 'Lo, here is Christ:' or, 'Lo, he is there;' believe him not. For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect. But take ye heed: behold, I have foretold you all things. Wherefore, if they shall say unto you, 'Behold, he is in the desert;' go not forth: 'Behold, he is in the secret chambers;' believe it not. For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For wheresoever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together. For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled; for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people. And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled."

*And what shall be the sign of thy Coming?*

"Immediately after the tribulation of those days there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on

## THE CLASH WITH THE OLD REGIME

the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken. Then shall they see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and he shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from the uttermost part of the earth to the uttermost part of heaven. And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh."

And he spake unto them a parable,

"Behold the fig tree, and all the trees; when they now shoot forth, ye see and know of your own selves that summer is now nigh at hand. So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand. Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, till all be fulfilled. Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away. But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father. Take ye heed, watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is. But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. Two women shall be grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken, and the other left. Watch therefore; for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come. But know this, that if the goodman of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and

## BEHOLD, THY KING COMETH UNTO THEE

would not have suffered his house to be broken up. Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh. Who then is that faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods. But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, 'My lord delayeth his coming;' and shall begin to smite his fellow servants, and to eat and drink with the drunken; the lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not aware of, and shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man. And what I say unto you, I say unto all. Watch!"

### *And the end of the Age*

"Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. And five of them were wise and five were foolish. They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them: but the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. And at midnight there was a cry made, 'Behold, the bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him.' Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. And the foolish said unto the wise, 'Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out.' But the wise answered,

## THE CLASH WITH THE OLD REGIME

‘Not so; lest there be not enough for us and for you; but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves.’ And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage; and the door was shut. And afterward came also the other virgins, saying, ‘Lord, Lord, open to us.’ But he answered and said, ‘Verily I say unto you, I know you not.’ Watch therefore; for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh.”

“For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods. And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey. Then he that had received five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents. And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two. But he that received one went and digged in the earth and hid his lord’s money. After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them. And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, ‘Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: Behold, I have gained beside them five talents more.’ His lord said unto him, ‘Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.’ He also that received two talents came and said, ‘Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beside them.’ His lord said unto him, ‘Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been

## BEHOLD, THY KING COMETH UNTO THEE

faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.' Then he which had received the one talent came and said, 'Lord, I knew thee that thou art a hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strewed: and I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast that is thine.' His lord answered and said unto him, 'Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knowest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strewed: thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury. Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him that hath ten talents. For unto everyone that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away, even that which he hath. And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: for there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.'

"When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: and before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats: and he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, 'Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: for I was an hungry and ye gave me meat, I was thirsty and ye gave me drink, I was a stranger and ye took me in; naked and ye clothed me, I was sick and ye visited me, I was in prison and ye came unto

## THE CLASH WITH THE OLD REGIME

me.' Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, 'Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or thirsty, and gave thee drink? When saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee? Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee?' And the King shall answer and say unto them, 'Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me.' Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, 'Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: for I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat, I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink, I was a stranger, and ye took me not in, naked, and ye clothed me not, sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not.' Then shall they also answer him, saying, 'Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee?' Then shall he answer them, saying, 'Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not unto me.' And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal."

And in the daytime he was teaching in the temple; and at night he abode in the mount that is called the Mount of Olives.

### WEDNESDAY: THE FOURTH DAY OF THE WEEK

And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, for to hear him. And there were certain Greeks among them that came up to worship at the feast:

BEHOLD, THY KING COMETH UNTO THEE

the same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying,

“Sir, we would see Jesus.”

Philip cometh and telleth Andrew: and again Andrew and Philip tell Jesus.

*I, if I be lifted up, will draw all men unto me*

Jesus answered them, saying,

“The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit. He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal. If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall my servant be: if any man serve me, him shall my Father honour.

“Now is my soul troubled. And what shall I say? ‘Father, save me from this hour?’ But for this cause came I unto this hour. ‘Father, glorify thy name.’”

Then came there a voice from heaven, saying,

“I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again.”

The people therefore that stood by, and heard it, said that it thundered: others said,

“An angel spake to him.”

Jesus answered and said,

“This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes. Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out. And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me.” This he said, signifying what death he should die.

The people answered him,

## THE CLASH WITH THE OLD REGIME

“We have heard out of the law that Christ abideth for ever: and how sayest thou, ‘The Son of man must be lifted up’? who is this Son of man?”

Then Jesus said unto them,

“Yet a little while is the light with you. Walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you: for he that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth. While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be children of light.”

Jesus cried and said,

“He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me. And he that seeth me seeth him that sent me. I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me should not abide in darkness. And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I am not come to judge the world, but to save the world. He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day. For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. And I know that his commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak.”

These things spake Jesus, and departed, and did hide himself from them. And though he had done so many miracles before them, yet they believed not on him: that the saying of Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake,

“Lord, who hath believed our report? and to whom hath

## BEHOLD, THY KING COMETH UNTO THEE

the arm of the Lord been revealed?" Therefore they could not believe, because that Isaiah said again, "He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart; that they should not see with their eyes, nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them." These things said Isaiah, when he saw his glory, and spake of him.

Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed on him: but because of the Pharisees they did not confess him, lest they should be put out of the synagogue: for they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God.

*They consulted how they might put him to death*

And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, that he said unto his disciples,

"Ye know that after two days is the feast of the passover, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified."

Now the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the passover, and the chief priests and scribes sought how they might kill him; for they feared the people. Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, into the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas, and consulted how they might take Jesus by subtilty, and put him to death.

But they said,

"Not on the feast day, lest there be an uproar among the people."

Then entered Satan into Judas, surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve. And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he

## THE CLASH WITH THE OLD REGIME

might betray him unto them. And when they heard it they were glad.

And he said unto them,  
"What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you?"

And they promised to give him money, and covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver. And he promised, and from that time he sought opportunity to betray him in the absence of the multitude.

# CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED

VI.

*My God, why hast Thou forsaken me?*

*My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? Why art thou so far from helping me? . . . But I am a worm, and no man: a reproach of men, and despised of the people. All they that see me laugh me to scorn: they shoot out the lip, they shake the head, saying, “He trusted in the Lord that he would deliver him: let him deliver him, seeing he delighted in him. . . .” They pierced my hands and my feet, I may tell all my bones: they look and stare upon me. They part my garments among them, and cast lots upon my vesture. But be not thou far from me, O LORD; O my Strength; haste thee to help me!*

*A Prophecy of David  
Psalm 22, 1000 B.C.*

THE UPPER ROOM  
THE GARDEN OF GETHSEMANE  
AND THE HILL CALLED CALVARY



THEN came the first day of the feast of unleavened bread, when the passover must be killed.

And Jesus sent Peter and John, saying,

“Go and prepare us the passover, that we may eat.”

And they said unto him,

“Where wilt thou we prepare?”

And he said unto them,

“Go into the city; and behold, when ye are entered into the city, there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water; follow him into the house where he entereth in. And ye shall say to the goodman of the house, ‘The Master saith unto thee, My time is at hand, I will keep the passover at thy house; where is the guest chamber where I shall eat the passover with my disciples?’ And he will show you a large upper room, furnished and prepared; there make ready for us.”

And the disciples did as Jesus had appointed them; and they came into the city, and found as he had said unto them; and they made ready the passover.

THURSDAY: THE LAST SUPPER

Now before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this

## CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED

world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end. And when evening was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him. And he said unto them,

“With desire have I desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer, for I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God.”

And as they did eat, Jesus took bread; and, when he had given thanks, he brake it, and gave it to his disciples, saying,

“Take, eat, this is my body which is given for you: do this in remembrance of me.”

Likewise after supper he took the cup; and, when he had given thanks, he gave it to them, saying,

“Drink ye all of this, for this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for you and for many for the remission of sins: do this, as oft as ye shall drink it, in remembrance of me.

“Verily I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine until the kingdom of God shall come, and I shall drink it new with you in my Father’s kingdom.”

And there was also a strife among them which of them should be accounted the greatest.

And he said unto them,

“The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors. But ye shall not be so; but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve. For whether is greater, he that

## MY GOD, WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?

sitteth at meat? or he that serveth? Is not he that sitteth at meat? But I am among you as he that serveth. Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations. And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me; that ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel."

And supper being ended, the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray him; Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God; he riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments; and took a towel, and girded himself. After that he poureth water into a basin, and began to wash his disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith he was girded.

Then cometh he to Simon Peter; and Peter saith unto him,

"Lord, dost thou wash my feet?"

Jesus answered and said unto him,

"What I do thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter."

Peter saith unto him,

"Thou shalt never wash my feet."

Jesus answered him,

"If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me."

Simon Peter saith unto him,

"Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head."

Jesus saith unto him,

"He that is washed needeth not save to wash his feet, but

## CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED

is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all." For he knew who should betray him; therefore said he, "Ye are not all clean."

So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto them,

"Know ye what I have done unto you? Ye call me Master and Lord: and ye say well; for so I am. If I then, your Lord and Master, have washed your feet, ye also ought to wash one another's feet. For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The servant is not greater than his Lord; neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him. If ye know these things happy are ye if ye do them."

"I speak not of you all; I know whom I have chosen: but that the Scripture may be fulfilled, 'He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel against me.' Now I tell you before it come, that when it is come to pass ye may believe that I am he. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me."

When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said,

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me."

And they were exceeding sorrowful, and began to say unto him one by one,

"Lord, is it I?" and another said, "Is it I?"

And he said,

"Behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me is with me

## MY GOD, WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?

on the table. And truly the Son of man goeth, as it is written of him; but woe unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! It had been good for that man if he had never been born.” And they began to inquire among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing.

Now there was leaning on Jesus’ bosom one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved. Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake. He then lying on Jesus’ breast saith unto him,

“Lord, who is it?”

Jesus answered,

“He it is, to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped it.” And when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon.

Then Judas answered and said,

“Master, is it I?”

He said unto him,

“Thou hast said.”

And after the sop Satan entered into him.

Then said Jesus unto him,

“That thou doest, do quickly.”

Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto him. For some of them thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, “Buy those things that we have need of against the feast;” or that he should give something to the poor. He then, having received the sop, went immediately out. And it was night.

*Simon, Simon, Satan hath desired to have you*

Therefore, when he was gone out, Jesus said,

“Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified

## CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED

in him. If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorify him in himself, and shall straightway glorify him.

“Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me; and as I said unto the Jews, ‘Whither I go, ye cannot come;’ so now I say to you. A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.”

Simon Peter said unto him,

“Lord, whither goest thou?”

Jesus answered him,

“Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now; but thou shalt follow me afterward.”

Peter said unto him,

“Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thy sake.”

And the Lord said,

“Simon, Simon, wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake? behold, Satan hath desired to have you that he may sift you as wheat. Verily, verily, I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow till thou has denied me thrice. But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.”

And he said unto him,

“Lord, I am ready to go with thee, both into prison, and to death.”

And he said,

“I tell thee, Peter, the cock shall not crow this day, before thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.”

## MY GOD, WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?

And he said unto them,

“When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye anything?”

And they said,

“Nothing.”

Then said he unto them,

“But now, he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise his scrip: and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one. For I say unto you, that this that is written must yet be accomplished in me, ‘And he was reckoned among the transgressors:’ for the things concerning me have an end.”

And they said unto him,

“Lord, behold, here are two swords.”

And he said unto them,

“It is enough.”

### *Let not your heart be troubled*

“Let not your heart be troubled; ye believe in God, believe also in me. In my Father’s house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.”

Thomas saith unto him,

“Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way?”

Jesus saith unto him,

“I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father but by me. If ye had known me, ye should

## CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED

have known my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him."

Philip saith unto him,

"Lord, show us the Father, and it sufficeth us."

Jesus saith unto him,

"Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, 'Show us the Father'? Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works. Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very work's sake. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father. And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. If ye shall ask anything in my name, I will do it.

"If ye love me, keep my commandments. And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you. I will not leave you comfortless: I will come unto you. Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also. At that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you. He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me; and he that loveth me shall be loved

## MY GOD, WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?

of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself unto him."

Judas (not Iscariot) saith unto him,

"Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the world?"

Jesus answered and said unto him,

"If a man love me, he will keep my words; and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him. He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me.

"These things I have spoken unto you, being yet present with you. But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you. Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid. Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away and come again unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, 'I go unto the Father:' for my Father is greater than I. And now I have told you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye might believe. Hereafter, I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me. But that the world may know that I love the Father; and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do."

"Arise, let us go hence."

And when they had sung a hymn, they went out.

## CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED

### THE FINAL REVELATION<sup>1</sup>

*I am come in my Father's name*

“I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me. I am the vine, ye are the branches. He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit; for without me ye can do nothing. If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples. As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love. If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love.

“These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full. This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you. Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends. Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard

<sup>1</sup> Spoken possibly in the Courtyard, or beside the Great Vine in the Temple, on the way to the Garden.

## MY GOD, WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?

of my Father I have made known unto you. Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain; that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.

“These things I command you, that ye love one another. If the world hate you, you know that it hated me before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own, but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. Remember the word that I said unto you. The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also. But all these things will they do unto you for my name’s sake, because they know not him that sent me. If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin; but now they have no cloak for their sin. He that hateth me hateth my Father also. If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin; but now they have both seen and hated both me and my Father. But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, ‘They hated me without a cause.’ But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me: and ye shall also bear witness, because you have been with me from the beginning.”

*The Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name*

“These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended. They shall put you out of the synagogues:

## CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED

yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service. And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me. But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you. But now I go my way to him that sent me; and none of you asketh me, 'Whither goest thou?' But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart. Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away; for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you. And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment: of sin, because they believe not on me; of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more; of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged.

"I have many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak; and he will show you things to come. He shall glorify me; for he shall receive of mine and shall show it unto you. All things that the Father hath are mine; therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall show it unto you. A little while, and ye shall not see me, and again, a little while, and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father."

Then said some of his disciples among themselves,

"What is this that he saith unto us, 'A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me;' and, 'Because I go to the Father'?" They said

## MY GOD, WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?

therefore, "What is this that he saith, 'A little while'? we cannot tell what he saith."

Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them,

"Do ye inquire among yourselves of that I said, 'A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me'? Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice; and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow because her hour is come; but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world. And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you. And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it to you. Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.

"These things I have spoken unto you in proverbs; but the time cometh, when I shall no more speak with you in proverbs, but I shall show you plainly of the Father. At that day ye shall ask in my name; and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you: for the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God. I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world; again, I leave the world, and go to the Father."

His disciples said unto him,

"Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no proverb. Now we are sure that thou knowest all things, and

## CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED

needest not that any man should ask thee; by this we believe that thou camest forth from God."

Jesus answered them,

"Do ye now believe? Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone, and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me. These things have I spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation; but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world."

*Father, I have declared unto them thy name*

These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said,

"Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee: as thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him. And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent. I have glorified thee on the earth; I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do. And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was. I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world. Thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word. Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee. For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me.

## MY GOD, WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?

“I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine, and all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them. And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one as we are. While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name; those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the Scripture might be fulfilled. And now I come to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves. I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. I pray not that thou shouldst take them out of the world, but that thou shouldst keep them from the evil. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth. As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.

“Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; that they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us; that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one even as we are one: I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me. Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where

## CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED

I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me; for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world. O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee; but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me. And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it; that the love wherewith thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them."

### THE GARDEN OF GETHSEMANE

When Jesus has spoken these words he went, as he was wont, to the mount of Olives; and his disciples also followed him.

Then saith Jesus unto them,

"All ye shall be offended because of me this night; for it is written, 'I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.' But after I am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee."

Peter answered and said unto him,

"Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended."

Jesus said unto him,

"Verily, I say unto thee that this day, even in this night, before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice."

But he spake the more vehemently,

"If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in any wise."

Likewise said also all his disciples.

*My soul is exceeding sorrowful*

And they went over the brook Kedron, and came to a place which was named Gethsemane, where was a garden,

## MY GOD, WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?

into the which he entered and his disciples. And Judas also, which betrayed him, knew the place; for Jesus oft times resorted thither with his disciples.

And when he was at the place, he said unto them,

“Sit ye here, while I go and pray yonder.

“Pray, that ye not enter into temptation.”

And he taketh with him Peter and James and John, and began to be sorrowful and very heavy.

Then said he unto them,

“My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: tarry ye here, and watch with me.” And he went forward a little, and was withdrawn from them about a stone’s cast, and kneeled down, and prayed that, if it were possible, the hour might pass from him.

And he said,

“Abba, Father, all things are possible unto thee; take away this cup from me: nevertheless, not what I will, but what thou wilt.”

And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him; and he prayed, saying:

“O my Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass from me, nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt.”

And being in an agony, he prayed the more earnestly:

“Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me; nevertheless, not my will, but thine be done.” And his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground.

And when he rose up from prayer, and was come to his disciples, he found them sleeping from sorrow. And he saith unto Peter,

“Simon, sleepest thou? could you not watch with me

## CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED

one hour? Watch and pray, lest ye enter into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak."

He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, "O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done."

And when he returned he found them asleep again; for their eyes were heavy, neither wist they what to answer him. And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.

Then cometh he to his disciples, and saith unto them,

"Sleep on now, and take your rest; it is enough, the hour is come; behold the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

"Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that doth betray me."

*Betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss?*

And while he yet spake, lo, Judas, having received a band of men and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns and torches and weapons.

Jesus therefore, knowing all things that should come upon him, went forth, and said unto them,

"Whom seek ye?"

They answered him,

"Jesus of Nazareth."

Jesus saith unto them,

"I AM."<sup>1</sup>

Now he that betrayeth him had given them a sign, say-

<sup>1</sup> The name in the Jewish Scriptures for God Himself: the great "I AM." (Exodus 3).

## MY GOD, WHY HAS THOU FORSAKEN ME?

ing, "Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he; take him, hold him fast, and lead him away safely."

And as soon as he was come he goeth straightway to Jesus and saith,

"Master, Master;" and kissed him.

And Jesus said unto him,

"Friend, wherefore art thou come? Betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss?"

As soon, then, as he had said unto them, "I AM", they went backward, and fell to the ground.

Then asked he them again,

"Whom seek ye?"

And they said,

"Jesus of Nazareth."

Jesus answered,

"I have told you that I am he.

"If therefore, ye seek me, let these go their way:" that the saying might be fulfilled, which he spake, "Of them which thou gavest me I have lost none."

Then came they and laid their hands on Jesus and took him. And when they which were about him saw what would follow, they said unto him,

"Lord, shall we smite with the sword?"

Then Simon Peter having a sword drew it, and smote the high priest's servant, and cut off his right ear. The servant's name was Malchus.

And Jesus answered and said,

"Suffer ye thus far." And he touched his ear and healed him.

Then said Jesus unto Peter,

"Put up thy sword into the sheath: all they that take the

## CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED

sword shall perish with the sword. Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels? But how then shall the Scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be? The cup which my Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?"

Then Jesus said unto the chief priests, and the captains of the temple, and the elders which were come to him,

"Are ye come out as against a thief, with swords and staves for to take me? When I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched forth no hands against me: but this is your hour, and the power of darkness." But all this was done that the Scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled.

Then all the disciples forsook him and fled.

And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth cast about his naked body. And the young men laid hold on him; and he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked.

Then the band and the captain and officers of the Jews took Jesus, and bound him, and led him away to Annas first; for he was the father-in-law to Caiaphas, which was the high priest that same year. Now Caiaphas was he which gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

## THE PALACE OF THE HIGH PRIEST

And they that had laid hold on Jesus, brought him into the high priest's house, where the scribes and elders were assembled. And Peter followed afar off, and so did another disciple. That disciple was known unto the high priest, and went in with Jesus into the Palace of the high priest. But

## MY GOD, WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?

Peter stood at the door without. Then went out that other disciple, which was known unto the high priest, and spake unto her that kept the door, and brought in Peter. And he went in, and sat with the servants to see the end.

And Peter was beneath in the palace; and the servants and officers stood there who had made a fire of coals in the midst of the hall, for it was cold; and they warmed themselves; and Peter stood with them, and warmed himself. And when they were set down together, Peter sat down among them. Then cometh the damsel that kept the door; and when she saw Peter warming himself, she earnestly looked upon him, and said,

“This man was also with him.”

And she saith unto Peter,

“Art thou not also one of this man’s disciples? for thou also wast with Jesus of Nazareth.”

And he denied before them all, saying,

“Woman, I know him not, neither understand I what thou sayest.” And he went out into the porch; and the cock crew.

The high priest then asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.

Jesus answered him,

“I spake openly to the world; I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither the Jews always resort; and in secret have I said nothing. Why askest thou me? Ask them which heard me, what I have said unto them: behold, they know what I said.”

And when he had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by struck Jesus with the palm of his hand, saying,

## CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED

“Answerest thou the high priest so?”

Jesus answered him,

“If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil: but if well, why smitest thou me?”

Now when Peter was gone out into the porch, another maid saw him, and said unto them that stood by,

“This fellow was also with Jesus of Nazareth.”

They said therefore unto him,

“Art not thou also one of his disciples?”

And again he denied with an oath,

“Man, I am not. I do not know the man.”

Now Annas had sent Jesus bound into Caiaphas the high priest, and the chief priests and elders sought false witness against Jesus to put him to death; but found none; yea, though many false witnesses came, yet found they none. For many bare false witness against him, but their witness agreed not together. At the last came two false witnesses, saying,

“This fellow said, ‘I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days.’ ”

“We heard him say, ‘I will destroy this temple that is made with hands, and within three days I will build another made without hands.’ ”

But neither did their witness agree together.

And the high priest arose, and stood in the midst, and said unto him,

“Answerest thou nothing? What is it which these witness against thee?”

But Jesus held his peace, and answered nothing.

Now Peter stood in the porch; and after about the space of one hour another confidently affirmed, saying,

## MY GOD, WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?

“Of a truth this fellow also was with him; for he is a Galilean.”

And they that stood by said again to Peter,

“Surely thou art one of them: for thou art a Galilean, and thy speech betrayeth thee.”

And one of the servants of the high priest, being his kinsman whose ear Peter cut off, saith,

“Did not I see thee in the garden with him?”

Then began he to curse and to swear, saying,

“I know not this man of whom ye speak.” And immediately, while he yet spake, the cock crew the second time. And the Lord turned and looked upon Peter; and Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, “Before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice.” And Peter went out and wept bitterly.

## FRIDAY: THE COUNCIL OF THE SANHEDRIN

And as soon as it was day, the elders of the people, and the chief priests and the scribes came together, and led Jesus into their council saying,

“Art thou the Christ? tell us.”

And he said unto them,

“If I tell you, ye will not believe: and if I also ask you, ye will not answer me, nor let me go. Hereafter, shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.”

And the high priest answered and said unto him,

“I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God.”

And Jesus said,

“I am. And henceforth ye shall see the Son of man sitting

## CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED

on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven."

Then the high priest rent his clothes, saying,

"He hath spoken blasphemy; what further need have we of witnesses? for we ourselves have heard of his own mouth. Behold, now ye have heard his blasphemy. What think ye?"

And they all condemned him, saying,

"He is guilty of death."

Then did they spit in his face, and buffeted him; and the men that held Jesus mocked him, and smote him. And when they had blindfolded him, they struck him on the face with the palms of their hands, and asked him, saying,

"Prophesy unto us, thou Christ, Who is he that smote thee?"

And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.

Then Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, saying,

"I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood."

And they said,

"What is that to us? see thou to that."

And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself.

And the chief priests took the silver pieces and said,

"It is not lawful for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood!" And they took counsel,

## MY GOD, WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?

and bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in. Wherefore that field was called "The field of blood," unto this day.

Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying, "And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the children of Israel did value; and gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me."

## THE CASTLE OF ANTONIA

And when they had bound Jesus they led him from Caiaphas, unto the hall of judgment, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor; and it was early. And they themselves went not into the judgment hall, lest they should be defiled; but that they might eat the passover.

And when Pilate was sat down on the judgment seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, "Have nothing to do with that just man; for I have suffered many things this day in a dream because of him."

Pilate then went out unto them, and said,

"What accusation bring ye against this man?"

They answered and said unto him,

"If he were not a malefactor, we would not have delivered him unto thee."

Then Pilate said unto them,

"Take ye him, and judge him according to your law."

The Jews therefore said unto him,

"It is not lawful for us to put any man to death," that the saying of Jesus might be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying what death he should die.

## CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED

*Christ, the King, before Pilate*

And they began to accuse him, saying,

“We found this fellow perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cæsar, and saying that he himself is Christ, a king.”

Then Pilate entered into the judgment hall again, and called Jesus, and said unto him,

“Art thou the King of the Jews?”

Jesus answered him,

“Sayest thou this thing of thyself, or did others tell it thee of me?”

Pilate answered,

“Am I a Jew? Thine own nation and the chief priests have delivered thee unto me: what hast thou done?”

Jesus answered,

“My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews; but now is my kingdom not from hence.”

Pilate therefore said unto him,

“Art thou a king then?”

Jesus answered,

“Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my voice.”

Pilate said unto him,

“What is truth?”

And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them,

“I find no fault in this man.”

## MY GOD, WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?

### *Jesus, the Galilean, before Herod*

And the chief priests accused him of many things: but he answered nothing. And Pilate asked him again, saying,

“Answerest thou nothing? Hearest thou not how many things they witness against thee?” And he answered him never a word; insomuch that the governor marvelled greatly.

And they were the more fierce, saying,

“He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jewry, beginning from Galilee unto this place.”

When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean. And as soon as he knew that he belonged unto Herod’s jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself also was at Jerusalem at that time.

And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad: for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him; and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him. Then he questioned with him in many words; but he answered him nothing. And the chief priests and scribes stood and vehemently accused him. And Herod with his men of war set him at naught, and mocked him, and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate.

And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together; for before they were at enmity between themselves.

### *Whom will ye that I release unto you?*

Now at the feast the governor was wont to release unto the people one prisoner, whomsoever they desired. And they had then a notable prisoner named Barabbas, who for

## CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED

a certain sedition in the city, and for murder, was cast into prison, and lay bound with them that had made insurrection with him. And the multitude, crying aloud, began to desire him to do as he had ever done unto them.

Pilate therefore, when he had called together the chief priests and the rulers and the people, said unto them,

“Ye have brought this man unto me as one that perverteth the people; and, behold, I, having examined him before you, have found no fault in the man touching those things whereof ye accuse him; no, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him; and lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto him. I will therefore chastise him and release him. For ye have a custom, that I should release unto you one at the passover; will ye therefore that I release unto you the King of the Jews?” For he knew that for envy the chief priests had delivered him: therefore he said unto them, “Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus which is called Christ?”

But the chief priests and elders persuaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus.

The Governor answered and said unto them,

“Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you?”

And they cried out all at once, saying,

“Not this man, but Barabbas.

“Away with this man, and release unto us Barabbas.”

Now Barabbas was a robber.

Pilate therefore, willing to release Jesus, spake again to them saying,

“What shall I do then with Jesus which is called Christ?”

“What will ye that I shall do unto him whom ye call the King of the Jews?”

## MY GOD, WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?

They all say unto him,  
“Let him be crucified.”

And the governor said unto them the third time,  
“Why, what evil hath he done? I have found no cause  
of death in him; I will therefore chastise him, and let him  
go.”

And they cried out the more exceedingly, saying,  
“Crucify him! Crucify him!”

And they were instant with loud voices, requiring that  
he might be crucified; and the voices of them and of the  
chief priests prevailed.

### *I will chastise Him, and release Him*

Then Pilate therefore took Jesus and scourged him. And  
the soldiers of the governor led him away into the common  
hall, called Prætorium; and they called together the whole  
band of soldiers. And they stripped him, and put on him a  
purple robe. And when they had platted a crown of thorns,  
they put it on his head, and a reed in his right hand; and  
they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying,  
“Hail, King of the Jews!”

And they smote him with their hands, and did spit upon  
him, and took the reed and smote him on the head; and  
bowing their knees, worshipped him.

Pilate therefore, when he had scourged Jesus, went forth  
again, and saith unto them,

“Behold, I bring him forth unto you, that ye may know  
that I find no fault in him.”

Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and  
the purple robe. And Pilate saith unto them,

“Behold the man!”

## CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED

### *The real accusation against the Prisoner*

When the chief priests therefore and officers saw him, they cried,

“Crucify him! Crucify him!”

Pilate saith unto them,

“Take ye him, and crucify him: for I find no fault in him.”

The Jews answered him,

“We have a law, and by our law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God.”

When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he was the more afraid; and went again into the judgment hall, and saith unto Jesus,

“Whence art thou?”

But Jesus gave him no answer.

Then said Pilate unto him,

“Speakest thou not unto me? Knowest thou not that I have power to crucify thee, and have power to release thee?”

Jesus answered,

“Thou couldst have no power at all against me, except it were given thee from above; therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath the greater sin.”

And from henceforth Pilate sought to release him.

### *The subtle accusation against the Judge*

But the Jews cried out saying,

“If thou let this man go, thou art not Cæsar’s friend: whosoever maketh himself a king, speaketh against Cæsar.”

When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought

## MY GOD, WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?

Jesus forth, and sat down in the judgment seat in a place that is called the Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha. And it was the preparation of the passover, and about the sixth hour; and he saith unto the Jews,

“Behold your King!”

But they cried out,

“Away with him, away with him, crucify him!”

Pilate saith unto them,

“Shall I crucify your King?”

The chief priests answered,

“We have no King but Cæsar.”

When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed his hands before the multitude, saying,

“I am innocent of the blood of this just person: see ye to it.”

Then answered all the people and said,

“His blood be on us, and on our children.”

### *The Fatal Decision*

Then Pilate, willing to content the people, gave sentence that it should be as they required. And he released unto them him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they desired; but he delivered Jesus to their will.

Then delivered he him, therefore, unto them to be crucified; and the soldiers, after they had mocked him, took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him, and led him away to crucify him.

### THE PLACE CALLED CALVARY

And they took Jesus and led him away; and he, bearing his cross, went forth into a place called "The place of a skull", which is called in the Hebrew "Golgotha." And as they led him away, they laid hold upon one Simon, a Cyrenian, who passed by, coming out of the country; the father of Alexander and Rufus: on him they laid the cross, that he might bear it after Jesus. And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him.

But Jesus, turning unto them, said,

"Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves and for your children. For, behold, the days are coming in the which they shall say, 'Blessed are the barren and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck.' Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, 'Fall on us,' and to hills, 'Cover us.' For if they do these things in the green tree, what shall be done in the dry?"

### *And they crucified Him*

And there were also two others, malefactors, led with him to be put to death. And when they were come to "The Place of the Skull," which (in the Latin) is called "Calvary," they gave him to drink wine mingled with myrrh; but when he had tasted thereof, he would not drink.

And it was the third hour, and they crucified him.

Then said Jesus,

MY GOD, WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?

“Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do.”

Then were there two thieves crucified with him; one on the right hand, and another on the left, and Jesus in the midst. And the Scripture was fulfilled, which saith, “And he was numbered with the transgressors.”

Then the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments and made four parts, to every soldier a part; and also his coat: now the coat was without seam, woven from the top throughout. They said therefore among themselves, “Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be:” that the Scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, “They parted my garments among them, and for my vesture they did cast lots.”

These things therefore the soldiers did. And sitting down, they watched him there; and set up over his head his accusation written, “This is Jesus the King of the Jews”. For Pilate wrote a title and superscription, and put it on the cross; and the writing was,

“JESUS OF NAZARETH  
THE KING OF THE JEWS”

This title then read many of the Jews; for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city: and it was written in Hebrew, and Greek, and Latin. Then said the chief priests of the Jews unto Pilate,

“Write not ‘The King of the Jews,’ but that he said ‘I am the King of the Jews.’”

Pilate answered,

“What I have written I have written.”

## CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED

*If thou be the Christ, save thyself and us*

And the people stood beholding. And they that passed by railed on him and reviled him, wagging their heads, and saying,

“Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, save thyself. If thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross.”

And the rulers also with them derided him, saying,

“He saved others; let him save himself, if he be Christ, the chosen of God.”

Likewise also the chief priests mocking said among themselves with the scribes,

“He saved others; himself he cannot save. If he be the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe him. He trusted in God; let him deliver him now, if he will have him: for he said ‘I am the Son of God.’”

The soldiers also mocked him, coming to him and offering him vinegar, and saying,

“If thou be the King of the Jews, save thyself.”

The thieves also, which were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth.

And one of the malefactors which were hanged, railed on him, saying,

“If thou be the Christ, save thyself and us.”

But the other answering, rebuked him, saying,

“Dost thou not fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? and we, indeed justly, for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss.”

## MY GOD, WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?

And he saith unto Jesus,

“Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom.”

And Jesus said unto him,

“Verily I say unto thee, Today shalt thou be with me in Paradise.”

### *It is finished*

Now there stood by the cross of Jesus his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary the wife of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene. When Jesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple, standing by, whom he loved, he saith unto his mother,

“Woman, behold thy son!”

Then saith he to the disciple,

“Behold thy mother!”

And from that hour that disciple took her into his own home.

And it was about the sixth hour. Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over the whole land until the ninth hour, and the sun was darkened.

And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice,

“Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?” which is, being interpreted,

“My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?”

And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said,

“Behold, he calleth for Elijah.”

## CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED

After this, Jesus, knowing that all things were accomplished, that the Scripture might be fulfilled, saith,  
“I thirst.”

Now there was set a vessel of vinegar: and straightway one of them ran, and took a sponge and filled it with vinegar, and put it on a reed and put it to his mouth, and gave him to drink. The rest said,

“Let be, let us see whether Elijah will come to save him.”

When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he cried with a loud voice,

“It is finished!”

And he said,

“Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit:” and having said this, he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.

*Truly this was the Son of God*

And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent; and the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose, and came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.

Now when the centurion which stood over against him, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake and the things that were done, they feared greatly, saying,

“Truly, this was the Son of God.” And the centurion glorified God, saying, “Certainly this was a righteous man; truly this man was the Son of God.”

And all the people that came together at that sight, be-

## MY GOD, WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?

holding the things which were done, smote their breasts and returned.

And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood afar off, beholding these things: among them was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the less and of Joses, and Salome, the mother of Zebedee's children; who also, when he was in Galilee, followed him and ministered unto him; and many other women which came up with him unto Jerusalem.

*And when evening was come*

The Jews therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the Sabbath day (for that sabbath was a high day), besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away. Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him. But when they came to Jesus and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs; but one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water. And he that saw it bare record, and his record is true; and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe. For these things were done, that the Scripture should be fulfilled, 'A bone of him shall not be broken.' And again, another Scripture, 'They shall look on him whom they pierced.'

And when even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea, named Joseph, being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews, and went boldly unto Pilate, and craved the body of Jesus. Now Joseph of Arimathea

## CHRIST IS ARRESTED AND CRUCIFIED

was a good man and a just; an honourable counsellor (the same had not consented to the counsel and deed of them); who also himself waited for the kingdom of God.

And Pilate marvelled if Jesus were already dead: and calling unto him the centurion, he asked him whether he had been any while dead. And when he knew it of the centurion, Pilate gave him leave, and commanded the body to be delivered.

And Joseph bought fine linen, and came therefore and took the body of Jesus. And there came also Nicodemus, which at the first came to Jesus by night, and brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about an hundred pound weight. Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen cloths with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury.

Now in the place where he was crucified there was a garden; and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid. And Joseph laid Jesus in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and they rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed.

And that day was the preparation, and the sabbath drew on. And Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Joses sitting over against the sepulchre, beheld where he was laid. And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments; and rested the sabbath day according to the commandment.

MY GOD, WHY HAST THOU FORSAKEN ME?

SATURDAY:  
THE SEVENTH DAY OF THE WEEK

Now the next day, that followed the day of the preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate, saying,

“Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, ‘After three days I will rise again.’ Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night and steal him away, and say unto the people, ‘He is risen again from the dead,’ so the last error shall be worse than the first.”

Pilate said unto them,

“Ye have a watch: go your way, make it as sure as ye can.”

So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

# HE RISES TO RE-MAKE THE WORLD

VII.

*All power is given unto me*

O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken: ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?" And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself. . . . Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the Scriptures, and saith unto them, "Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day: and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. And ye are witnesses of these things."

*The words of the risen Lord  
St. Luke, Chapter 24*

## EPILOGUE



### THE END IS IN REALITY THE BEGINNING

AND when the sabbath was past, as it began to dawn toward the first day of the week, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door of the sepulchre, and sat upon it. His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow: and for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men.

*Who shall roll us away the stone?*

Now upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, while it was yet dark, cometh Mary Magdalene unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain others with her.

And they said among themselves,

“Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre?”

And when they looked they saw that the stone was rolled away: for it was very great. And entering into the sepulchre they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment; and they were affrighted.

And he said unto them,

“Fear not ye; for I know that ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, which was crucified. He is not here: for he is risen, as he said: behold the place where the Lord lay. But go your way quickly, and tell his disciples and Peter, that he is

## HE RISES TO RE-MAKE THE WORLD

risen from the dead: and, behold, he goeth before you into Galilee: there ye shall see him, as he said unto you: lo, I have told you."

And they went out quickly, and fled from the sepulchre, with fear and great joy; for they trembled and were sore amazed; neither said they anything to any man, for they were afraid. And they did run to bring his disciples word.

Now when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the city, and showed unto the chief priests all the things which were done. And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers, saying,

"Say ye, 'His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept.' And if this come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and secure you."

So they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

### *Peter and John ran both together to the Sepulchre*

Then Mary Magdalene runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple, whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them,

"They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him."

Peter therefore went forth, and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre. So they ran both together: and the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the sepulchre. And he stooping down, and looking in, saw

## ALL POWER IS GIVEN UNTO ME

the linen clothes lying; yet went he not in. Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen clothes laid by themselves; and the napkin, that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by itself. Then went in also that other disciple, which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw and believed. For as yet they knew not the Scripture, that he must rise again from the dead.

Then the disciples went away again unto their own home. And Peter departed wondering in himself at that which was come to pass.

*Woman, why weepest thou? Whom seekest thou?*

Now when Jesus was risen early the first day of the week he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he cast seven devils.

Mary stood without at the sepulchre, weeping; and as she wept, she stooped down, and looked into the sepulchre, and seeth two angels in white sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain.

And they say unto her,

“Woman, why weepest thou?”

She saith unto them,

“Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.” And when she had thus said, she turned herself back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.

Jesus saith unto her,

“Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou?”

She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him,

## HE RISES TO RE-MAKE THE WORLD

“Sir, if thou have borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.”

Jesus saith unto her,

“Mary.”

She turned herself, and saith unto him,

“Rabboni;” which is to say, “Master.”

Jesus saith unto her,

“Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, ‘I ascend unto my Father, and to your Father; and to my God, and to your God.’ ”

Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples, as they mourned and wept, that she had seen the Lord, and that he had spoken these things unto her. And they, when they heard that he was alive, believed not.

*Why seek ye the living among the dead?*<sup>1</sup>

And the women entered into the sepulchre, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus. And it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments: and as they were afraid, and bowed down their faces to the earth, they said unto them,

“Why seek ye the living among the dead? He is not here, but is risen: remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee, saying, ‘The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified,

<sup>1</sup> These incidents, recorded by St. Luke and St. Matthew, seem to refer to the second visit of the women when, still perplexed, they returned to the Garden with one or two others, shortly after Mary Magdalene, to seek for the body of the Lord Jesus.

## ALL POWER IS GIVEN UNTO ME

and the third day rise again.’’ And they remembered his words.

And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying,

“All hail!”

And they came and held him by the feet, and worshipped him.

Then said Jesus unto them,

“Be not afraid: go tell my brethren that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me.”

And they returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest. It was Mary Magdalene and Joanna, and the other Mary the mother of James, and Salome, and other women that were with them, which told these things unto the apostles. And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.

*Ought not Christ to have suffered these things?*

And, behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem about three-score furlongs. And they talked together of all these things which had happened. And it came to pass, that, while they communed together and reasoned, Jesus himself drew near, and went with them. But their eyes were holden that they should not know him.

And he said unto them,

“What manner of communications are these that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and are sad?”

And one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering, said unto him,

## HE RISES TO RE-MAKE THE WORLD

“Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to pass there in these days?”

And he said unto them,

“What things?”

And they said unto him,

“Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people: and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him. But we trusted that it had been he which should have redeemed Israel: and beside all this, to-day is the third day since these things were done. Yea, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepulchre; and when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive. And certain of them which were with us went to the sepulchre, and found it even so as the women had said: but him they saw not.”

Then said he unto them,

“O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken: ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?” And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the Scriptures the things concerning himself.

And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went; and he made as though he would have gone further. But they constrained him, saying,

“Abide with us; for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent.” And he went in to tarry with them.

And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took

ALL POWER IS GIVEN UNTO ME

bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave it to them. And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight.

And they said one to another,

“Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the Scriptures?”

And they arose the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them, saying,

“The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon!”

And they told what things were done in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.

And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst.

*As my Father hath sent me, even so send I you*

The same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them,

“Peace be unto you.”

But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit. And he saith unto them,

“Why are ye troubled? and why do thoughts arise in your hearts? Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.”

And when he had thus spoken, he showed them his hands, and his feet, and his side. Then were the disciples glad when they saw the Lord.

And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he saith unto them,

## HE RISES TO RE-MAKE THE WORLD

“Have ye here any meat?” And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of a honeycomb. And he took it, and did eat before them.

And he said unto them,

“These are the words which I spake unto you while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms, concerning me?”

Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the Scriptures, and said unto them,

“Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer and to rise from the dead the third day: and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. And ye are witnesses of these things.”

Then said Jesus unto them again,

“Peace be unto you: as my Father hath sent me, even so send I you.” And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, “Receive ye the Holy Ghost: whosesoever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whosesoever sins ye retain, they are retained.”

*My Lord, and my God*

But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came. The other disciples therefore said unto him,

“We have seen the Lord.”

But he said unto them,

“Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe.”

## ALL POWER IS GIVEN UNTO ME

And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: then came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said,

“Peace be unto you.”

Then said he to Thomas,

“Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand and thrust it into my side; and be not faithless, but believing.”

And Thomas answered and said unto him,

“My Lord and my God!”

Jesus saith unto him,

“Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.”

And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book: but these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name.

*Simon, son of John, lovest thou me?*

After these things Jesus showed himself again to his disciples at the sea of Tiberias (for they had departed into Galilee); and on this wise showed he himself. There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples.

Simon Peter saith unto them,

“I go a fishing.”

They say unto him,

“We also go with thee.”

## HE RISES TO RE-MAKE THE WORLD

They went forth, and entered into a ship immediately; and that night they caught nothing. But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore; but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus.

Then said Jesus unto them,

“Children, have ye any meat?”

They answered him,

“No.”

And he said unto them,

“Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find.”

They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes.

Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved saith unto Peter, “It is the Lord.”

Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt his fisher’s coat unto him, for he was naked, and did cast himself into the sea. And the other disciples came in a little ship (for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits), dragging the net with fishes. As soon then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and bread.

Jesus saith unto them,

“Bring of the fish which ye have now caught.”

Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land, full of great fishes, a hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

Jesus saith unto them,

“Come and dine.”

And none of his disciples durst ask him, “Who art thou?” knowing that it was the Lord.

## ALL POWER IS GIVEN UNTO ME

Jesus then cometh, and taketh bread, and giveth them, and fish likewise.

This is now the third time that Jesus showed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter,

“Simon, son of John, lovest thou me more than these?”

He saith unto him,

“Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee.”

He saith unto him,

“Feed my lambs.”

He saith to him again the second time,

“Simon, son of John, lovest thou me?”

He saith unto him,

“Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee.”

He saith unto him,

“Feed my sheep.”

He saith unto him the third time,

“Simon, son of John, lovest thou me?”

Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, “Lovest thou me?” And he said unto him,

“Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee.”

Jesus saith unto him,

“Feed my sheep. Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdest thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not.” This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorify God.

And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him,

## HE RISES TO RE-MAKE THE WORLD

“Follow me.”

Then Peter, turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved following; which also leaned on his breast at supper and said, ‘Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee?’ Peter seeing him saith to Jesus,

“Lord, and what shall this man do?”

Jesus saith unto him,

“If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee? follow thou me.”

Then went this saying abroad, among the brethren, that that disciple should not die; yet Jesus said not unto him, “He shall not die;” but, “If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee?”

This is one of the disciples which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true. And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written.

*Go ye into all the world, and preach the Gospel*

Then the eleven disciples went into a mountain in Galilee where Jesus had appointed them. And when they saw him they worshipped him: but some doubted.

And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying,

“Go ye into the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be condemned. And these signs shall follow them that believe: In my name they shall cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; and they shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly

## ALL POWER IS GIVEN UNTO ME

thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay their hands on the sick, and they shall recover.”

And he said unto them,

“All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost; teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world.”

### *Ye shall be witnesses unto Me*

And Jesus gave commandment through the Holy Ghost, unto the apostles whom he had chosen: to whom he showed himself alive after his passion by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God: and being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but “wait for the promise of the Father, which”, saith he, “ye have heard of me.

“For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence. And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high.”

When they therefore were come together, they asked him, saying,

“Wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel?”

And he said unto them,

“It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which

## HE RISES TO RE-MAKE THE WORLD

the Father hath put in his own power. But ye shall receive power after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judæa, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth."

*They preached everywhere, the Lord working with them*

And he led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them. And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven, and a cloud received him out of their sight.

And while they looked steadfastly toward heaven as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel; which also said,

"Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? This same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven."

And he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God. And they worshipped him; and returned to Jerusalem from the mount of Olives, with great joy: and were continually in the temple praising and blessing God.

And they went forth, and preached everywhere, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen.

ALL NATIONS SHALL  
SERVE HIM

VIII.

*Go ye therefore, and teach all nations*

*I beheld till the thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of days did sit, whose garment was white as snow, and the hair of his head like the pure wool. . . . Thousand thousands ministered unto him, and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him. . . . I saw in the night visions, and behold one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him. And there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages should serve him: his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed.*

*The Prophecy of Daniel  
Chapter 7, 500 to 200 B.C.*

## POSTSCRIPT



### THE VERDICT OF THREE WITNESSES

A.D. 30: The Birth of the Church reveals  
The Courage of One who denied Christ

*AND when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance. And there were dwelling at Jerusalem, Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven. Now when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, and were confounded, because that every man heard them speak in his own language. And they were all amazed and marvelled, saying one to another,*

*“Behold, are not all these which speak Galileans? And how hear we every man in our own tongue, wherein we were born? Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judæa, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia, Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of*

## ALL NATIONS SHALL SERVE HIM

*Libya about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and proselytes, Cretes and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of God."*

*And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to another,*

*"What meaneth this?"*

*Others mocking said,*

*"These men are full of new wine."*

*But Peter, standing up with the eleven, lifted up his voice, and said unto them,*

*"Ye men of Judæa, and all ye that dwell at Jerusalem, be this known unto you, and hearken to my words: for these are not drunken, as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third hour of the day. But this is that which was spoken by the prophet Joel: 'And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions and your old men shall dream dreams; and on my servants and on my handmaidens I will pour out in those days of my Spirit; and they shall prophesy. And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved.'*

*"Ye men of Israel, hear these words: Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know: Him being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain. This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses. Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this, which ye now see and hear.*

GO, THEREFORE: TEACH ALL NATIONS

“Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ.”

Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles,

“Men and brethren, what shall we do?”

Then Peter said unto them,

“Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call.”

And with many other words did he testify and exhort, saying,

“Save yourselves from this untoward generation.”

Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls. And they continued steadfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers. And fear came upon every soul: and many wonders and signs were done by the apostles. And all that believed were together, and had all things common; and sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need. And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart, praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.

Now Peter and John went up together into the temple at the hour of prayer, being the ninth hour. And a certain man

lame from his mother's womb was carried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the temple which is called Beautiful, to ask alms of them that entered into the temple; who seeing Peter and John about to go into the temple asked an alms. And Peter, fastening his eyes upon him with John, said,

“Look on us.”

And he gave heed unto them, expecting to receive something of them. Then Peter said,

“Silver and gold have I none; but such as I have give I thee: In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth rise up and walk.”

And he took him by the right hand, and lifted him up; and immediately his feet and ankle bones received strength. And he leaping up, stood, and walked, and entered with them into the temple, walking, and leaping, and praising God. And all the people saw him walking and praising God. And they knew that it was he which sat for alms at the Beautiful gate of the temple: and they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened unto him. And as the lame man which was healed held Peter and John, all the people ran together unto them in the porch which is called Solomon's, greatly wondering.

And as they spake unto the people, the priests, and the captain of the temple, and the Sadducees, came upon them, being grieved that they taught the people, and preached through Jesus the resurrection from the dead. And they laid hands on them, and put them in hold unto the next day: for it was now eventide. Howbeit many of them which heard the word believed; and the number of the men was about five thousand. And it came to pass on the morrow, that their rulers, and elders, and scribes, and Annas the high priest, and Caiaphas, and John and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the high priest, were

GO, THEREFORE: TEACH ALL NATIONS

gathered together at Jerusalem. And when they had set them in the midst, they asked,

“By what power, or by what name, have ye done this?”

Then Peter, filled with the Holy Ghost, said unto them,

“Ye rulers of the people, and elders of Israel, if we this day be examined of the good deed done to the impotent man, by what means he is made whole; be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole. This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner. Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.”

Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.

A.D. 60: Thirty Years later Agrippa hears  
The Witness of One who opposed Christ

Then Agrippa said unto Paul,

“Thou art permitted to speak for thyself.”

Then Paul stretched forth the hand, and answered for himself,

“I think myself happy, king Agrippa, because I shall answer for myself this day before thee touching all the things whereof I am accused of the Jews; especially because I knew thee to be expert in all customs and questions which are among

## ALL NATIONS SHALL SERVE HIM

*the Jews: wherefore I beseech thee to hear me patiently. My manner of life from my youth, which was at the first among mine own nation at Jerusalem, know all the Jews; which knew me from the beginning, if they would testify, that after the most straitest sect of our religion I lived a Pharisee. And now I stand and am judged for the hope of the promise made of God unto our fathers. Unto which promise our twelve tribes, instantly serving God day and night, hope to come. For which hope's sake, king Agrippa, I am accused of the Jews. Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the dead?*

*"I verily thought with myself, that I ought to do many things contrary to the name of Jesus of Nazareth. Which thing I also did in Jerusalem; and many of the saints did I shut up in prison, having received authority from the chief priests; and when they were put to death, I gave my voice against them. And I punished them oft in every synagogue, and compelled them to blaspheme; and being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted them even unto strange cities. Whereupon as I went to Damascus with authority and commission from the chief priests, at midday, O king, I saw in the way a light from heaven, above the brightness of the sun, shining round about me and them which journeyed with me. And when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking unto me, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, 'Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.' And I said, 'Who art thou, Lord?' And he said, 'I am Jesus, whom thou persecutest. But rise, and stand upon thy feet: for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witness both of these things which thou hast seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee; delivering thee from the*

GO, THEREFORE: TEACH ALL NATIONS

*people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee, to open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.'*

*"Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was not disobedient unto the heavenly vision; but shewed first unto them of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Judaea, and then to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turn to God, and do works meet for repentance. For these causes the Jews caught me in the temple, and went about to kill me. Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, witnessing both to small and great, saying none other things than those which the prophets and Moses did say should come: that Christ should suffer, and that he should be the first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light unto the people, and to the Gentiles."*

*And as he thus spake for himself, Festus said with a loud voice,*

*"Paul, thou art beside thyself; much learning doth make thee mad."*

*But he said,*

*"I am not mad, most noble Festus; but speak forth the words of truth and soberness. For the king knoweth of these things, before whom also I speak freely: for I am persuaded that none of these things are hidden from him; for this thing was not done in a corner."*

*"King Agrippa, believest thou the prophets? I know that thou believest."*

*Then Agrippa said unto Paul,*

*"Almost thou persuadest me to be a Christian."*

A.D. 90: The First Century closes with  
The Tribute of One who loved Christ

*Writing from his prison on the Island of Patmos, to which he had been banished by the Emperor Domitian, John speaks not only of the earthly Christ whom he had seen and known, but of his vision of the risen Christ who is alive to-day :*

*“When I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead. And he laid his right hand upon me, saying unto me, ‘Fear not; I am the first and the last: I am he that liveth and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death. Write the things which thou hast seen, and the things which are, and the things which shall be hereafter.’”*

*“That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our own eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, of the Word of Life (for the life was manifested unto us); that which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us; and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ. And these things write we unto you that your joy may be full. This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all. If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth; but if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin. If we say that we have no sin, we*

## GO, THEREFORE: TEACH ALL NATIONS

*deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.”*

“Beloved, let us love another: for love is of God; and everyone that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God. He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love. In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him. Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins. Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another. No man hath seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and his love is perfected in us. Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit. And we have seen and do testify that the Father hath sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world.”

“And I beheld, and lo, in the midst of the throne stood a Lamb, as it had been slain. And they sung a new song, saying, ‘Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation; and hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth.’ And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne, and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands; saying with a loud voice, ‘Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.’ And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the

ALL NATIONS SHALL SERVE HIM

*earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, 'Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever.'*"

*"And there were great voices in heaven, saying, 'The kingdoms of this world are become the Kingdom of our Lord, and of his Christ; and he shall reign for ever and ever.'*"

## SYNOPSIS

*Prologue: A Child is Born*

THE CLOSING YEARS

*THE FIRST PASSOVER—“The fifteenth year of Tiberius Cæsar”*

John's tribute to the Christ—After His Baptism  
John's tribute to the Christ—After His Temptation  
John's tribute to the Christ—After the Passover

*THE SECOND PASSOVER—“The acceptable year of the Lord”*

Jesus returns to Galilee—when John is arrested  
Jesus' ministry in Galilee—answers John's question  
Jesus returns for the Passover—after John's death

*THE LAST PASSOVER—“The year of the Crucifixion”*

A journey to Jerusalem—Autumn feast of Tabernacles  
A visit to Jerusalem—Winter feast of the Dedication  
Final journey to Jerusalem—Spring feast of Passover

THE CLOSING WEEK

The Clash with the old Regime  
Christ is arrested and Crucified

*Epilogue—The Lord is Risen*

## SYNOPSIS



IN compiling this life of Christ it became evident from the first that it is possible to classify the statements attributed to our Lord, and yet in doing so to mar the portrait of the living person. Although much of the material used by Matthew and Luke clearly comes not only from Mark's Gospel but from other common sources, they frequently reproduce it in different contexts. Christ's teaching must often have been repeated in different ways to meet the needs of different people. For this reason, in compiling from the four Gospels I have frequently retained more than one account of His messages. For instance in Matthew 18 the parable of the lost sheep forms part of Christ's talk with the disciples when He set a little child in the midst; in Luke 15 the same parable is used in His conversation with "publicans and sinners." Or, again, the parable of the pounds in the house of Zacchæus, recorded in Luke 19, is almost identical with the parable of the talents recorded in Matthew 25 as part of the Olivet discourse to the disciples. The wedding feast of Luke 14, and the marriage supper of Matthew 22, provide a further illustration of the way Jesus undoubtedly used similar ideas to meet the needs of different occasions.

## SYNOPSIS

Matthew groups many of our Lord's sayings in his arrangement of the "Sermon on the Mount"; Luke weaves them into the warp and woof of his narrative. By retaining both, and yet seeking at the same time to create a single sequence, we see the living personality shining through the records with even greater radiance.

It would occupy too much space to state all of the decisive factors in the creation of the present sequence. Such matters have already been fully discussed by many authors, as in the late Dr. William Temple's valuable Commentary on the fourth Gospel, where he gives reasons for placing the fifth chapter of St. John's Gospel, with chapter 7: 15-24, after the sixth chapter. In the Synopsis which follows the references from St. Mark's Gospel are set in italic as a reminder that the sequence is largely based on the Marcan order. Page references are also given for each incident referred to in the Synopsis.

## I

# PROLOGUE

## *A New Age is born at Bethlehem*

*Then the fulness of time was come*  
 The Word was made flesh and dwelt  
 among us  
 The Annunciation of the birth of John  
 The Annunciation of the birth of Jesus  
 Mary's visit to her cousin Elisabeth  
 Joseph's vision of the Angel of the Lord  
*and sent forth His Son*  
 The birth of John—the Baptist  
 The birth of Jesus—the Christ  
 The babe, presented to the Lord, in the  
 Temple  
 Worshipped by wise men and taken to  
 Egypt  
*that we might receive the adoption of sons*  
 Jesus increased in favour with God and  
 man  
 I must be about my Father's business

	<i>Matt.</i>	<i>Mark</i>	<i>Luke</i>	<i>John</i>	<i>page</i>
				1: 1-14	3
			1: 5-25		5-6
	(1: 1-18)		1:26-38		7
			1:39-56		8
	1:18-25				9
				1:57-80	9-10
				2: 1-20	11-12
				2:21-38	12-13
	2: 1-18				14-15
				2:19-23	
				2:39-40	15-16
				2:41-52	16

## II

# THE FIRST PASSOVER

## *John Announces the New Day*

**JOHN'S TRIBUTE TO THE CHRIST**  
*—After His Baptism*  
 The Voice of one crying in the wilderness  
 This is my beloved Son in whom I am  
 well pleased  
 This is He of whom I speak: He that  
 cometh

3: 1-12	<i>I: 1-8</i>	3: 1-18		19-21
3:13-17	<i>I: 9-11</i>	3:21-38		21-23
			1:15-28	23-24

**JOHN'S TRIBUTE TO THE CHRIST**  
*—After His Temptation*  
 If thou be the Son of God—The conflict  
 in the wilderness  
 This is the Son of God—The witness at  
 Bethabara  
 Thou art the Son of God—The miracle  
 at Cana

4: 1-11	<i>I:12-13</i>	4: 1-13		24-25
			1:29-51	25-27
			2: 1-13	28-29

**JOHN'S TRIBUTE TO THE CHRIST**  
*—After the Passover*  
 In Jerusalem many believe on Him  
 At night Nicodemus, the ruler, comes to  
 Him  
 At Ænon John pays his last tribute to Him  
 He must increase, I must decrease

			2:23-25	29
			3: 1-21	29-30
			3:31-36	31
			3:22-30	31-32
		3:19-20		

## III

## THE SECOND PASSOVER

*Christ Proclaims the New Order*

<i>Matt.</i>	<i>Mark</i>	<i>Luke</i>	<i>John</i>	<i>page</i>	
					<b>JESUS RETURNS TO GALILEE</b>
					<i>When John is cast into prison</i>
4:12	1:14	4:14	4: 1-3	35	<i>He returns in the power of the Spirit in Galilee</i>
			4: 4	35	<i>He must needs go through Samaria</i>
			4: 5-26	35-37	<i>The woman—I know that Messiah cometh</i>
			4:27-45	37-38	<i>The men—We know that this is the Christ</i>
			4:46-54	38-39	<i>At Cana—Except ye see ye will not believe</i>
13:54-58	6: 1-6	4:14-30		39-41	<i>At Nazareth—He marvelled at the unbelief</i>
4:13-22	1:15-20	5: 1-11		41-42	<i>His fame went throughout all Syria</i>
8:14-17	1:21-34	4:33-41		43-44	<i>At Capernaum—He calls Peter, James and John</i>
4:23-25	1:35-39	4:42-44		44	<i>Heals a demoniac, and Peter's wife's mother</i>
8: 2-4	1:40-45	5:12-16		45	<i>In other cities He preaches the Kingdom of God</i>
					<i>Cleanses a leper, and seeks solitude to pray</i>
					<i>He speaks and acts with authority</i>
9: 1-8	2: 1-12	5:17-26		45-46	<i>The Pharisees take counsel to destroy Him</i>
9: 9-17	2:13-22	5:27-39		47-48	<i>He heals the paralytic at Capernaum</i>
12: 1-8	2:23-28	6: 1-5		48-49	<i>And calls Levi, the publican</i>
12: 9-21	3: 1-12	6: 6-11		49-50	<i>He claims to be Lord of the sabbath</i>
					<i>And heals on the sabbath day</i>
					<i>He taught as one having authority</i>
5:1—8:1	3:13-19	6:12-16		50-51	<i>He ordains twelve Apostles</i>
8: 5-13		6:17-40		51-60	<i>And preaches the Sermon on the Mount</i>
		7: 1-10		60-61	<i>He heals the Centurion's servant</i>
		7:11-17		62	<i>And raises the widow's son</i>
		7:18		62	<i>—John hears news of all these things</i>
					<b>JESUS' MINISTRY IN GALILEE</b>
					<i>Answers John's message from prison</i>
					<i>Art thou He that should come?</i>
11: 2-6		7:19-23		63	<i>Or look we for Another?</i>
11: 7-24		7:24-35		64-65	<i>Go and tell John—The herald of the</i>
11:25-30				65	<i>Kingdom</i>
		7:36-50		65-67	<i>And the tribute of the Christ</i>
					<i>Come unto Me—The appeal of the</i>
					<i>Kingdom</i>
					<i>And the response of the sinner</i>

	<i>Matt.</i>	<i>Mark</i>	<i>Luke</i>	<i>John</i>	<i>page</i>
<i>The Kingdom of God is come unto you</i> I cast out devils—The power of the Kingdom	12:22-37	3:19-30	8: 1-3 11:14-23		67 67-70
And the blasphemy of the Pharisees My brethren—The members of the Kingdom	12:43-45		11:24-26 11:27-28		68 69
And the relatives of our Lord —The parables of the Kingdom of God	12:46-50 13: 1-52	3:31-35 4: 1-34	8:19-21 8: 4-18		69-70 70-75
<i>o and tell what ye have seen and heard</i>					
<i>The winds and the sea obey Him</i>					
The storm is stilled And the demoniac liberated The dead raised (Jairus' daughter) And the diseased cured	8:23-27 8:28-34 9:18-26 9:20-22	4:35-41 5: 1-20 5:21-43 5:25-34	8:22-25 8:26-30 8:40-56 8:43-48		75-76 76-78 78-80 78-79
<i>The multitudes marvel at Him</i>					
The blind see And the dumb speak The poor have the Gospel preached to them (The Twelve sent out) —After this Jesus departed to teach and to preach	9:27-31 9:32-34 9:35-38 10: 1-42 11: 1		6: 7-11 6:12-13	9: 1-5 9: 6	80 81 81 81-84 84
<b>ESUS RETURNS FOR THE PASSOVER—<i>After John's death in prison</i></b>					
<i>the Passover, a feast of the Jews, was nigh</i>				6: 4	87
<i>Whence shall we buy bread?</i> Hearing of John's death, Jesus seeks solitude	14: 1-13	6:14-32	9: 7-10	6: 1-4	85-86
The people come to Him : He feeds five thousand They attempt, by force, to make Him King	14:13-21 14:22-23	6:33-44 6:45-46	9:11-17	6: 5-13 6:14-15	87-88 89
<i>I am the bread of life</i>					
Returning at night, Jesus walks on the sea The people come to Him : He heals many In the synagogue He speaks of the bread of life	14:24-33 14:34-36	6:47-53 6:54-56		6:16-21 6:22-27 6:28-71	89-90 90 91-94
<i>esus went up to Jerusalem for the Feast</i>				5:1	94
<i>I have done one work, and ye all marvel</i> He heals the impotent man, in Jerusalem The Jews object, because it is the sabbath But Jesus claims equality with God <i>The works that I do bear witness of me</i> The witness of John, the works, and the Father				5: 2-9 5:10-16 5:17-30 5:31-38	94 95 95-96 96-97
The witness of the Scriptures (the word) The witness of experience (the will) —After these things, Jesus walked in Galilee				5:39-47 7:15-24 7: 1	97 97-98 98

IV

THE LAST PASSOVER

*Christ Founds His New Society*

<i>Matt.</i>	<i>Mark</i>	<i>Luke</i>	<i>John</i>	<i>page</i>	
					<i>A JOURNEY TO JERUSALEM—For the Autumn feast of Tabernacles</i>
					<i>Out of Galilee ariseth no Prophet</i>
15: 1-20	7: 1-23			101-103	<i>The journey to Tyre and Sidon</i> Defilement from without and from within
15:21-31	7:24-37			103-104	The Jewish Prophet and the Gentile woman
15:32-39	8: 1-26			105-107	The loaves, and the 'leaven of the Pharisees'
16: 1-12					<i>The journey to Cæsarea Philippi and the Mount of Transfiguration</i>
16:13-28	8:27-33	9:18-27		107-109	Cæsarea: Thou art the Christ, the Son of God
17: 1-13	9: 1-13	9:28-36		109-110	The Transfiguration: This is my beloved Son
17:14-23	9:14-32	9:37-45		110-112	In the valley: The Son of man must suffer
					<i>The journey from the mountain to Capernaum</i>
17:24-27				113	Doth not your master pay tribute?
18: 1-14	9:33-50	9:46-50		113-115	Who shall be the greatest?
18:15-35		17: 1-6		115-117	How oft shall I forgive?
					<i>This is of a truth that Prophet</i>
19: 1-2	10: 1	9: 51	7: 2	117	<i>He set His face to go to Jerusalem</i>
			7: 3-10	117-118	At Nazareth, His brethren deride Him
8:19-22		9:52-62		118-119	At Samaria, the people reject Him
			{ 7:11-14 } 7:25-53	119-121	At Jerusalem, many recognise Him
			8: 1-11	121-122	<i>He confronts the leaders in the Temple</i>
			8:12-30	122-124	What sayest thou? . . . Go, and sin no more
			8:31-59	124-126	Who art thou? . . . The Light of the world
					Whom makest thou thyself? . . . The I AM
			9: 1-12	126-127	<i>He heals the blind man by the way-side</i>
			9:13-34	128-129	He washed at the pool of Siloam
			9:35-41	130	He witnessed to the Pharisees
			10:19-21	130	When he met Jesus, he worshipped Him
					—There was a division among the Jews
					<i>A VISIT TO JERUSALEM—For the winter feast of the Dedication</i>
					<i>Jesus teaches throughout Judæa</i>
					<i>Proclaim: The Kingdom of God is come</i>
11:20-24		10: 1-24		131-133	The labourers—The Seventy sent out
		10:25-37		133-134	The lawyer—The good Samaritan
		10:38-42		134	The two sisters—The home at Bethany

	<i>Matt.</i>	<i>Mark</i>	<i>Luke</i>	<i>John</i>	<i>page</i>
<i>Pray: Thy Kingdom come</i>			11: 1-13		135
The disciples—Lord teach us to pray	12:38-42		11:29-32		136
The Pharisees—Master, we would see a sign			11:37-54		136-137
The Lawyer—Master, thou reproachest us					
<i>He travels toward Jerusalem</i>					
<i>He went throughout the villages, teaching</i>			12:18-30		138-139
Beware of covetousness			12:31-59		139-141
Seek first the Kingdom of God			13: 1-21		141-143
Repent, lest ye also perish			13:22		143
<i>And journeying toward Jerusalem</i>			13:23-30	10: 1-18	143-145
Enter by the gate . . . enter by the door			10:22-39		145-146
If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly			10:40-42		146
Jesus leaves Jerusalem: goes beyond Jordan			13:31-35		146-147
—O Jerusalem, Jerusalem					
<b>THE FINAL JOURNEY TO JERUSALEM—For the spring feast of Passover</b>					
<i>The last tour of the Provinces</i>					
<i>He travels from Peræa to Samaria</i>			14: 1-35		148-150
The Pharisees, and the parable of the supper			15: 1-32		151-153
The Publicans, and the parable of the Prodigal			16: 1-31		153-155
The disciples, and the parable of the steward			17: 7-10		
<i>He passes through Samaria and Galilee</i>			17:11-21		155-156
He cleanses the lepers, and teaches the people			18: 1-14		155-157
He speaks of marriage, and blesses the children	19: 8-15	10: 2-16	18:15-17		157-159
The rich young ruler, and the vineyard labourers	19:16-30	10:17-31	18:18-30		159-161
	20: 1-10				161-162
<i>The final journey to the Capital</i>					
<i>Let us go into Judæa again</i>				11: 1-46	162-165
He returns to Bethany, and raises Lazarus				11:47-53	166
The Sanhedrin determines to put him to death				11:54	166
He withdraws to Ephraim, near the wilderness				11:55-57	166
The people ask: Will he come to the Feast?					
<i>Behold, we go up to Jerusalem</i>	20:17-19	10:32-34	18:31-34		167
The third prediction of His Passion	20:20-28	10:35-45			167-168
The request of James and John	20:29-34	10:46-52	18:35-43		168-169
The appeal of blind Bartimæus			19: 1-27		169-171
The conversion of Zacchæus			19:28		171
He went before, ascending up to Jerusalem					

## THE WEEK OF THE PASSION

*The Clash with the old Regime*

<i>Matt.</i>	<i>Mark</i>	<i>Luke</i>	<i>John</i>	<i>page</i>	
26: 6-13	14: 3-9		12: 1	175	The sabbath : six days before the Passover
			12: 2-11	175-176	The supper in Simon's house at Bethany
					<b>SUNDAY</b>
21: 1-11	11 1-10 11:11	19:29-44	12:12-19	176-178 178	The triumphant entry into Jerusalem Jesus visits the Temple and returns to Bethany
					<b>MONDAY</b>
21:18-22	11:12-26	(13: 6-9)		178-180	The cursing of the fruitless 'Jewish fig tree'
21:12-17	11:15-19	19:45-48	2:14-22	179-180	The cleansing of the corrupt Jewish Temple
					<b>TUESDAY</b>
21:23-27	11:27-33	20: 1-8		181	<i>By what authority doest thou these things?</i>
21:28-32				182	The parable of the two sons
21:33-46	12: 1-12	20: 9-20		182-183	The parable of the wicked husbandmen
22: 1-15				183-184	The parable of the wedding guests
22:16-22	12:13-17	20:21-26		184-185	<i>No man durst ask Him any more questions</i>
22:23-33	12:18-27	20:27-39		185-186	The Pharisees, and the tribute money
22:34-40	12:28-34	20:40		186-187	The Sadducees, and the resurrection
					The lawyer, and the great commandment
22:41-46	12:35-37	20:41-44		187	<i>Christ warns the Pharisees in the Temple</i>
23: 1-39	12:38-44	20:45-47		188-190	What think ye of Christ?
24: 1-2	13: 1-2	21: 1-6		191	Woe unto you! scribes, Pharisees, hypocrites!
24: 3-28	13: 3-23	21: 7-24		191-193	Your house is left unto you desolate
24:29-51	13:24-37	21:25-38		193-195	<i>Christ warns His disciples on the mount</i>
25: 1-46		21:37		195-198	When shall these things be?
					What shall be the sign of thy coming?
					And of the end of the age?
					<b>WEDNESDAY</b>
		21:38	12:20-22	198-199	<i>The Greeks desire to see Him</i>
			12:23-36	199-200	I will draw all men unto me
			12:44-50	200	He that believeth me, believeth the Father
			12:36-43	200-201	Among the chief rulers many believed
26: 1-2				201	<i>The leaders seek to destroy Him</i>
26: 3-5	14: 1-2	22: 1-2		201	Jesus again predicts His crucifixion
26:14-16	14: 10-11	22: 3-6		201-202	The priests again plan to arrest Him
					Judas Iscariot agrees to betray Him

## THE TRIAL AND CRUCIFIXION

*Christ is Arrested and Crucified*

	<i>Matt.</i>	<i>Mark</i>	<i>Luke</i>	<i>John</i>	<i>page</i>
<b>THURSDAY</b>					
<i>The last Supper in the upper room</i>	26:17-19	<i>14:12-16</i>	22: 7-13		205
One of you shall betray me	26:20-29	<i>14:17-25</i>	22:14-30	13: 1-30	205-209
Simon, Satan hath desired to have you			22:31-38	13:31-38	209-211
Let not your heart be troubled	26:30	<i>14:26</i>		14: 1-31	211-213
<i>The Final Revelation after the Supper</i>					
I am come in my Father's name				15: 1-27	214-215
The Father will send the Holy Spirit in				16: 1-33	215-218
my name					
Father, I have declared unto them Thy				17: 1-26	218-220
name					
<i>The garden of Gethsemane</i>					
All ye shall be offended because of me	20:31-35	<i>14:27-31</i>	22:39		220
My soul is exceeding sorrowful	20:36-46	<i>14:32-42</i>	22:40-46	18: 1-2	220-222
Betrayest thou the Son of man with a	20:47-56	<i>14:43-52</i>	22:47-53	18: 3-11	222-224
kiss?					
<b>FRIDAY</b>					
<i>They bound Jesus and led Him away</i>				18:12-14	224
To the palace of the High Priest	20:57-75	<i>14:53-72</i>	22:54-65	18:15-27	224-227
To the council of the Sanhedrin	20:68-68	<i>14:62-65</i>	22:66-71		227-228
To the castle of Antonia	27: 1-10	<i>15: 1</i>	23: 1	18:28-32	228-229
	27:19				
<i>The Son of God, before the Roman Governor</i>					
Christ, the King, before Pilate	27:11	<i>15: 2</i>	23: 2-4	18:33-38	230
Jesus, the Galilean, before Herod	27:12-14	<i>15: 3-5</i>	23: 5-12		231
<i>Pilate, the Governor, seeks to release Him</i>					
The appeal to tradition	27:15-23	<i>15: 6-14</i>	23:18-23	18:39-40	231-233
Examination by scourging	27:27-30	<i>15:16-19</i>		19: 1-5	233
<i>The Roman Governor, before the Son of God</i>					
The real accusation against the prisoner				19: 6-12	234
The subtle accusation against the judge				19:12-15	234-235
<i>The fatal decision</i>					
I am innocent of the blood of this just	27:24	<i>15:15</i>	23:24		235
person					
His blood be on us and on our children	27:25-26	<i>15:20</i>	23:25	19:16	235

<i>Matt.</i>	<i>Mark</i>	<i>Luke</i>	<i>John</i>	<i>page</i>	
27:31-32	<i>15:21-23</i>	23:26 23:27-31	19:16-17	236 236	<i>Friday—9 a.m. till Noon</i>
27:33-38	<i>15:24-28</i>	23:32-33 23:34	19:18-24	236-237 236	<i>Jesus went forth to the place called Calvary</i> The women weep for Him The soldiers crucify Him But Christ prays for them— 'Father, forgive them'
27:39-44	<i>15:29-32</i>	23:35-37 23:39-42 23:43		238 238-239 239	<i>If thou be the Christ, save thyself</i> The crowd mock Him The thief believes on Him And Christ receives him— 'Today, shalt thou be with me'
					<i>Noon till 3 p.m.</i>
27:45	<i>15:33</i>	23:44-45		239	<i>The tragic hours of darkness</i>
27:46-47	<i>15:34-35</i>		19:25-27	239 239	An eclipse veils the sun 'Woman, behold thy son' 'My God, why hast thou forsaken me?'
27:48-49	<i>15:36</i>		10:28-29	240	<i>The triumphant hour of death</i>
27:50	<i>15:37</i>		19:30	240 240	All things accomplished: 'I thirst' He cried aloud, 'It is finished' 'Father, into thy hands I commend my Spirit'
		23:46			<i>The Evening 5-6 p.m.</i>
27:51-56	<i>15:38-41</i>	23:47-49		240-241	<i>The Centurion declares his faith in Him</i>
27:57-60	<i>15:42-46</i>	23:50-53	19:31-37	241	<i>The Priests desire to hasten His death</i>
27:61	<i>15:47</i>	23:54-56	19:38-42	241-242	<i>Joseph seeks permission to bury Him</i>
				242	<i>Mary Magdalene beheld where they laid Him</i>
					<i>SATURDAY</i>
27:62-64				243	<i>Pilate is asked to provide a Roman Guard</i>
27:65				243	<i>The Priests are told to use the Temple Guard</i>
27:66				243	<i>They went and made the sepulchre sure Sealing the stone, and setting a watch</i>

THEOLOGY LIBRARY  
SCHOOL OF THEOLOGY  
AT CLAREMONT  
CALIFORNIA

## VII

### EPILOGUE

*He rises to remake the World*

*ERUSALEM—The first day of the week*

*Who shall roll us away the stone?*

The women come early to the sepulchre  
The Guard reports to the High Priest  
Peter and John run to the sepulchre

*The women return again to the garden*

First Mary comes alone, and meets Jesus  
The others follow her to the sepulchre  
On their way home, Jesus meets them

*The same evening he appears to Peter*

To two disciples on the road to Emmaus  
To ten Apostles in the upper room  
And to Thomas, with the others, a week  
later

*GALILEE—Some days later*

*go to Galilee, there shall ye see me*

He appears to seven disciples by the sea  
Then to the eleven on a mountain  
Then to five hundred brethren at once

*ERUSALEM—Before the Ascension*

*He was seen of them forty days, speaking of  
The Kingdom of God, and the kingdom  
of Israel*

Ye shall receive power: ye shall be wit-  
nesses

Parted from them: yet continued with  
them

	<i>Matt.</i>	<i>Mark</i>	<i>Luke</i>	<i>John</i>	<i>page</i>
	28: 1-8 28:11-15	16: 1-8 16: 9-11 28: 9-10	24: 1-2 24:12 24: 3-11 (1 Cor. 15: 5)	20: 1-2 20: 3-10 20:11-18 24:34	247-248 248 248-249 249-250 250-251 251 253
		16:12-13	24:13-35 24:36-48		251-253 253-254 254-255
		16:14		20:19-23 20:24-31	
	28:16-20	16:15-18 (1 Cor. 15: 6)		21: 1-25	255-258 258-259
					Acts 1: 1-6
			24:49	1: 7-8	259-260
		16:19-20	24:50-53	1: 9-11	260

## VIII

### POSTSCRIPT

*All Nations shall serve Him*

#### *THE VERDICT OF THREE WITNESSES*

D. 30: The birth of the Church reveals  
The courage of one who denied Christ

Acts 2:1-18, 21, 22-23, 32-33, 36, 37-47	263-265
Acts 3:1-11; 4:1-13	265-267

D. 60: Thirty years later Agrippa hears  
The witness of one who opposed Christ

Acts 26:1-28	267-269
--------------	---------

D. 90: The First Century closes with  
The tribute of one who loved Christ

Rev 1:17-19; 1 John 1:1-9; 4:7-14	270-271
Rev 5:6-13; 11:15	271-272